

Lake  
English Classics

MACAULAY

MILTON

AND

ADDISON

NEWCOMER



Class PR 3581

Book M2

Copyright N<sup>o</sup> 1925

**COPYRIGHT DEPOSIT.**







# The Lake English Classics

General Editor

LINDSAY TODD DAMON, A. B.

Professor of English in Brown University

- ADDISON—*Str Roger de Coverley Papers*—ABBOTT  
ADDISON AND STEELE—*Selections from The Tatler and The Spectator*—ABBOTT  
ÆNEID OF VIRGIL—ALLINSON  
AUSTEN—*Pride and Prejudice*  
BROWNING—*Selected Poems*—REYNOLDS  
BUILDERS OF DEMOCRACY—GREENLAW  
BUNYAN—*The Pilgrim's Progress*—LATHAM  
BURKE—*Speech on Conciliation with Collateral Readings*—WARD.  
BURNS—*Selected Poems* and CARLYLE—*Essay on Burns*—MARSH  
CHAUCER—*Selections*—GREENLAW  
COLERIDGE—*The Ancient Mariner*  
LOWELL—*Vision of Str Launfal* } 1 vol.—MOODY  
COOPER—*The Last of the Mohicans*—LEWIS  
COOPER—*The Spy*—DAMON  
DANA—*Two Years Before the Mast*—WESTCOTT  
DEFOE—*Robinson Crusoe*—HASTINGS  
Democracy Today—GAUSS.  
DE QUINCEY—*Joan of Arc and Selections*—MOODY  
DE QUINCEY—*The Flight of a Tartar Tribe*—FRENCH.  
DICKENS—*A Christmas Carol, etc.*—BROADUS  
DICKENS—*A Tale of Two Cities*—BALDWIN  
DICKENS—*David Copperfield*—BALDWIN  
DRYDEN—*Palamon and Arcite*—COOK  
EMERSON—*Essays and Addresses*—HEYDRICK  
English Poems—*From POPE, GRAY, GOLDSMITH, COLERIDGE, BYRON, MACAULAY, ARNOLD, and others*—SCUDDER  
English Popular Ballads—HART  
Essays—ENGLISH AND AMERICAN—ALDEN  
Familiar Letters—GREENLAW  
FRANKLIN—*Autobiography*—GRIFFIN  
French Short Stories—SCHWEIKERT  
GASKELL (Mrs.)—*Cranford*—HANCOCK  
GEORGE ELIOT—*Silas Marner*—HANCOCK  
GEORGE ELIOT—*The Mill on the Floss*—WARD  
GOLDSMITH—*The Vicar of Wakefield*—MORTON  
HAWTHORNE—*The House of the Seven Gables*—HERRICK  
HAWTHORNE—*Twice-Told Tales*—HERRICK AND BRUERE  
HUGHES—*Tom Brown's School Days*—DE MILLE  
IRVING—*Life of Goldsmith*—KRAPP  
IRVING—*The Sketch Book*—KRAPP  
IRVING—*Tales of a Traveller*—and parts of *The Sketch Book*—KRAPP

# The Lake English Classics - continued

---

- LAMB—*Essays of Elia*—BENEDICT  
LONGFELLOW—*Narrative Poems*—POWELL  
LOWELL—*Vision of Sir Launfal*—See Coleridge  
MACAULAY—*Essays on Addison and Johnson*—NEWCOMER  
MACAULAY—*Essays on Clive and Hastings*—NEWCOMER.  
MACAULAY—*Goldsmith, Frederic the Great, Madame D'Arblay*—NEWCOMER  
MACAULAY—*Essays on Milton and Addison*—NEWCOMER  
MILTON—*L'Allegro, Il Penseroso, Comus, and Lycidas*—NEILSON  
MILTON—*Paradise Lost, Books I and II*—FARLEY  
Old Testament Narratives—RHODES  
One Hundred Narrative Poems—TETER  
PALGRAVE—*Golden Treasury*—NEWCOMER  
PARKMAN—*The Oregon Trail*—MACDONALD  
POE—*Poems and Tales, Selected*—NEWCOMER  
POPE—*Homer's Iliad, Books I, VI, XXII, XXIV*—CRESSY AND MOODY  
READE—*The Cloister and The Hearth*—DE MILLE  
RUSKIN—*Sesame and Lilies*—LINN  
Russian Short Stories—SCHWEIKERT  
SCOTT—*Ivanhoe*—SIMONDS  
SCOTT—*Quentin Durward*—SIMONDS  
SCOTT—*Lady of the Lake*—MOODY  
SCOTT—*Lay of the Last Minstrel*—MOODY AND WILLARD  
SCOTT—*Marmion*—MOODY AND WILLARD  
SHAKSPERE—*The Neilson Edition*—Edited by W. A. NEILSON,  
    *As You Like It*                      *Macbeth*  
    *Hamlet*                                *Midsummer-Night's Dream*  
    *Henry V*                               *Romeo and Juliet*  
    *Julius Caesar*                        *The Tempest*  
  *Twelfth Night*  
SHAKSPERE—*Merchant of Venice*—LOVETT,  
SOUTHEY—*Life of Nelson*—WESTCOTT  
STEVENSON—*Inland Voyage and Travels with a Donkey*—LEONARD  
STEVENSON—*Kidnapped*—LEONARD  
STEVENSON—*Treasure Island*—BROADUS  
TENNYSON—*Selected Poems*—REYNOLDS  
TENNYSON—*The Princess*—COPELAND  
THOREAU—*Walden*—BOWMAN  
THACKERAY—*Henry Esmond*—PHELPS  
THACKERAY—*English Humorists*—CUNLIFFE AND WATT  
Three American Poems—*The Raven, Snow-Bound, Miles Standish*—  
    GREEVER  
Types of the Short Story—HEYDRICK  
Washington, Webster, Lincoln—DENNEY
- 

SCOTT, FORESMAN AND COMPANY  
CHICAGO: 623 S. Wabash Ave.      NEW YORK: 8 East 34th Street

The Lake English Classics

---

REVISED EDITION WITH HELPS TO STUDY

MACAULAY'S ESSAYS

ON

MILTON AND ADDISON

EDITED FOR SCHOOL USE

BY

ALPHONSO G. NEWCOMER

LATE PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH IN THE LELAND STANFORD  
JUNIOR UNIVERSITY

---

SCOTT, FORESMAN AND COMPANY  
CHICAGO NEW YORK

PR 3581  
M<sup>2</sup>  
1920

COPYRIGHT 1899, 1920  
BY SCOTT, FORESMAN AND COMPANY

MAY 15 1920

---

ROBERT O LAW COMPANY,  
PRINTERS AND BINDERS, CHICAGO

---

©Cl. A565949

## PREFACE

---

Julius Cæsar and Lord Macaulay have been much abused writers. They did not mean to write immortal works, least of all did they mean to write immortal exercises for the school-room. But when a man writes—just as he would fight, on the field of battle or in the political arena—with what Quintilian describes as “force, point, and vehemence of style,” he must expect the school-boy to devour his pages. This is right,—this is not abuse; the abuse is done when live literature is transformed into dead rhetoric, a thing for endless exercises in etymologies and constructions, until the very name of the author becomes odious. Perhaps it is late for this complaint; we flatter ourselves that we are coming to reason and balance in our methods. Certainly I should not try to discourage study, and liberal study, of the mechanics of composition. And there is no better medium for such study than Macaulay’s Essays. But I trust that every teacher to whom the duty of conducting such study falls will not at the same time forget that literature is an art which touches life very closely, and has its springs far back in the human spirit.

With the hope of encouraging this attitude I have ventured to assume the responsibility of setting afloat one more annotated text of Macaulay. Realizing that, in dealing with the work of a writer whose affiliations with literature are chiefly formal (Introduction, 19), there is no escape from considerations of style, I have frankly put the matter foremost. But I have tried to take a broad view of its significance, and in particular I have tried to do Macaulay justice. Altogether too many pupils have carried away from the study of him the narrow idea that his great achievement consisted in using one or two very patent (but, if they only knew it, very petty) rhetorical devices. It has been the primary aim of my Introduction to set these matters in their right perspective. I have not outlined specific methods of study, which are to be found everywhere by those who value them, but both Introduction and Notes contain many suggestions. It seems better to stop at this. Even the few illustrations I have used have been preferably drawn from essays not here printed. No editor should wish to take from teacher or pupil the profit of investigation or the stimulus of discovery.

There is another matter in which I should like to counsel vigilance, and that is the habit of requiring pupils to trace allusions, quotations, etc. The practice has been much abused, and a warning seems especially necessary in the study of a writer

like Macaulay, who crowds his pages with instances and illustrations. It is profitable to follow him in the process of bringing together a dozen things to enforce his point, but it is not profitable to reverse the process and allow ourselves to be led away from the subject in hand into a multitude of unrelated matters. Such practices are ruinous to the intellect. We must concentrate attention, not dissipate it. Only when we fail to catch the full significance of an allusion, should we look it up. Then we must see to it that we bring back from our research just what occasioned the allusion, just what bears on the immediate passage. Other facts will be picked up by the way and may come useful in good time, but for the purpose of our present study we should insist on the vital relation of every fact contributed.

So earnest am I upon this point that I must illustrate. At one place Macaulay writes: "Do we believe that Erasmus and Fracastorius wrote Latin as well as Dr. Robertson and Sir Walter Scott wrote English? And are there not in the Dissertation on India, the last of Dr. Robertson's works, in Waverley, in Marmion, Scotticisms at which a London apprentice would laugh?" Why should we be told (to pick out one of these half-dozen allusions) that Dr. Robertson's first name was William, that he lived from 1721 to 1793, and that he wrote such and such books? With all respect for the memory of Dr. Robertson, I submit

that this is not the place to learn about him and his histories. Macaulay's allusion to him is not explained in the least by giving his date. Yet there is something here to interpret, simple though it be. Let us put questions until we are sure that the pupil understands that Dr. Robertson, being a Scot, could not write wholly idiomatic English—English, say, of the London type—and that this is one illustration of the general truth that a man can write with purity only in his native tongue. It is such exercises in interpretation that I should like to see substituted for the disastrous game of hunting allusions.

I cannot flatter myself that I have achieved consistency in my own notes and glossary. To recur to the illustration above, I have omitted the name of Dr. Robertson, because Macaulay seems to tell us enough about him, while I have added a few words about Fracastorius in order that he may be to the reader something more than a name. But I cannot help suspecting that it is a waste of energy for any one to try to impress even this name on his mind, and I should be quite satisfied that a pupil of mine should never look it up, provided he had alertness enough to see that Fracastorius wrote in Latin though he was not a Roman, and discrimination enough to feel that there are other allusions of an entirely different character which must be looked up.

The glossary aims to include only names and



terms not familiar or easily found (provided they need explaining), and also names which, though easily found, call for some special comment. In general, when allusions are self-explaining, we should rest content with our text. In the first paragraph of the essay on Milton, for example, one Mr. Lemon is mentioned. Doubtless the *Dictionary of National Biography* would tell us something more about him, but Macaulay tells us all we need to know. Again, there is a reference to a fairy story told by Ariosto. But all the necessary details are given and it will be idle to hunt the story up in order to cite chapter and verse for it, though of course if one wants to read Ariosto, let him do so by all means—that is a different thing. On the other hand, an allusion to the lion in a certain fable is not made so clear, because Macaulay takes it for granted that we know the fable. If we do not, we must look it up. So, also, with such phrases as “the Ciceronian gloss,” “the doubts of the Academy,” “the pride of the Portico.” I could have wished to insert into the glossary nothing which an intelligent pupil could find for himself, though here an editor must sin a little in excess for the sake of schools and homes not well equipped with libraries. I have tried to decide each case upon its merits in the interest of genuine education, and only those who have attempted a similar task will understand its difficulties.

The text adopted is that of Lady Trevelyan's edition, with very slight changes in spelling, punctuation, and capitals.

A. G. N.

Stanford University, May, 1899.

## CONTENTS

	PAGE
PREFACE . . . . .	7
INTRODUCTION . . . . .	15
CHRONOLOGY AND BIBLIOGRAPHY . . . . .	43
THE ESSAYS:	
Milton . . . . .	45
The Life and Writings of Addison . . . . .	125
NOTES . . . . .	250
GLOSSARY . . . . .	268
APPENDIX	
Helps to Study . . . . .	275
Theme Subjects . . . . .	279
Selections for Class Reading . . . . .	280
Chronological Table . . . . .	281



## INTRODUCTION

---

When, in 1825, Francis Jeffrey, Editor of the *Edinburgh Review*, searching for "some clever young man who would write for us," laid his hands upon Thomas Babington Macaulay, he did not know that he was marking a red-letter day in the calendar of English journalism. Through the two decades and more of its existence, the *Review* had gone on serving its patrons with the respectable dulness of Lord Brougham and the respectable vivacity of its editor, and the patrons had apparently dreamed of nothing better until the momentous August when the young Fellow of Trinity, not yet twenty-five, flashed upon its pages with his essay on Milton. And for the next two decades the essays that followed from the same pen became so far the mainstay of the magazine that booksellers declared it "sold, or did not sell, according as there were, or were not, articles by Mr. Macaulay." Yet Jeffrey was not without some inkling of the significance of the event, for upon receipt of the first manuscript he wrote to its author the words so often quoted: "The more I think, the less I can conceive where you picked

up that style." Thus early was the finger of criticism pointed toward the one thing that has always been most conspicuously associated with Macaulay's name.

English prose, at this date, was still clinging to the traditions of its measured eighteenth-century stateliness. But the life had  
**2. Effect on Prose.** nearly gone out of it, and the formalism which sat so elegantly upon Addison and not uneasily upon Johnson had stiffened into pedantry, scarcely relieved by the awkward attempts of the younger journalists to give it spirit and freedom. It was this languishing prose which Macaulay, perhaps more than any other one writer, deserves the credit of rejuvenating with that wonderful something which Jeffrey was pleased to call "style." Macaulay himself would certainly have deprecated the association of his fame with a mere synonym for rhetoric, and we should be wronging him if we did not hasten to add that style, rightly understood, is a very large and significant thing, comprehending, indeed, a man's whole intellectual and emotional attitude toward those phases of life with which he comes into contact. It is the man's manner of reacting upon the world, his manner of expressing himself to the world; and the world has little beyond the manner of a man's expression by which to judge of the man himself. But a good style, even in its narrow sense of a good command of language, of a

masterly and individual manner of presenting thought, is yet no mean accomplishment, and if Macaulay had done nothing else than revivify English prose, which is, just possibly, his most enduring achievement, he would have little reason to complain. What he accomplished in this direction and how, it is our chief purpose here to explain. In the meantime we shall do well to glance at his other achievements and take some note of his equipment.

Praed has left this description of him: "There came up a short, manly figure, marvelously upright, with a bad neckcloth, and one hand in his waistcoat-pocket."

### 3. The Man.

We read here, easily enough, brusqueness, precision without fastidiousness, and self-confidence. These are all prominent traits of the man, and they all show in his work. Add kindness and moral rectitude, which scarcely show there, and humor, which shows only in a somewhat unpleasant light, and you have a fair portrait. Now these are manifestly the attributes of a man who knows what worldly comfort and physical well-being are, a man of good digestive and assimilative powers, well-fed, incapable of worry, born to succeed.

In truth, Macaulay was a man of remarkable vitality and energy, and though he died too early—at the beginning of his sixtieth year—he began his work young and continued it with almost unabated vigor to the end. But his "work" (as

we are in the habit of naming that which a man leaves behind him), voluminous as it is, represents only one side of his activity. There was the early-assumed burden of repairing his father's broken fortunes, and providing for the family of younger brothers and sisters. The burden, it is true, was assumed with characteristic cheerfulness—it could not destroy for him the worldly comfort we have spoken of—but it entailed heavy responsibilities for a young man. It forced him to seek salaried positions, such as the post of commissioner of bankruptcy, when he might have been more congenially employed. Then there were the many years spent in the service of the government as a Whig member of the House of Commons and as Cabinet Minister during the exciting period of the Reform Bill and the Anti-Corn-Law League, with all that such service involved—study of politics, canvassing, countless dinners, public and private, speech-making in Parliament and out, reading and making reports, endless committee meetings, endless sessions. There were the three years and a half spent in India, drafting a penal code. And there was, first and last, the acquisition of the knowledge that made possible this varied activity,—the years at the University, the study of law and jurisprudence, the reading, not of books, but of entire national literatures, the ransacking of libraries and the laborious deciphering of hundreds of manuscripts in the course of historical



research. Perhaps we fall into Macaulay's trick of exaggeration, but it is not easy to exaggerate the mental feats of a man who could carry in his memory works like *Paradise Lost* and *Pilgrim's Progress* and who was able to put it on record that in thirteen months he had read thirty classical authors, most of them entire and many of them twice, and among them such voluminous writers as Euripides, Herodotus, Plato, Plutarch, Livy, and Cicero. Nor was the classical literature a special field; Italian, Spanish, French, and the wildernesses of the English drama and the English novel (not excluding the "trashy") were all explored. We may well be astounded that the man who could do all these things in a lifetime of moderate compass, and who was besides such a tireless pedestrian that he was "forever on his feet indoors as well as out," could find time to produce so much literature of his own.

That literature—so to style the body of work which has survived him—divides itself into at least

4. **His Work.** five divisions. There are, first, the Essays, which he produced at intervals all through life. There are the Speeches which were delivered on the floor of Parliament between his first election in 1830 and his last in 1852, and which rank very high in that grade of oratory which is just below the highest. There is the Indian Penal Code, not altogether his own work and not literature of course, yet praised

by Justice Stephen as one of the most remarkable and satisfactory instruments of its kind ever drafted. There are the Poems, published in 1842, adding little to his fame and not a great deal to English literature, yet very respectable achievements in the field of the modern romantic ballad. Finally, there is the unfinished History of England from the Accession of James the Second, his last, his most ambitious, and probably, all things considered, his most successful work.

The History and Essays comprise virtually all of this product that the present generation cares to read. Upon the History, indeed, **5. History of England.** Macaulay staked his claim to future remembrance, regarding it as the great work of his life. He was exceptionally well equipped for the undertaking. He had such a grasp of universal history as few men have been able to secure, and a detailed knowledge of the period of English history under contemplation equalled by none. But he delayed the undertaking too long, and he allowed his time and energy to be dissipated in obedience to party calls. Death overtook him in the midst of his labors. Even thus, it is clear that he underestimated the magnitude of the task he had set himself. For he proposed to cover a period of nearly a century and a half; the four volumes and a fraction which he completed actually cover about fifteen years. His plan involved too much detail. It has been called pictorial history

writing, and such it was. History was to be as vital and as human as romance. It was to be in every sense a restoration of the life of the past. Macaulay surely succeeded in this aim, as his fascinating third chapter will always testify; whether the aim were a laudable one, we cannot stop here to discuss. Historians will continue to point out the defects of the work, its diffuseness, its unphilosophical character, perhaps its partisan spirit. But it remains a magnificent fragment, and it will be read by thousands who could never be persuaded to look into dryer though possibly sounder works. Indeed, there is no higher tribute to its greatness than the objection that has sometimes been brought against it, namely, that it treats a comparatively unimportant era of England's history with such fulness and brilliance, and has attracted to it so many readers, that the other eras are thrown sadly out of perspective.

But Macaulay's name is popularly associated with that body of Essays which in bulk alone (always excepting Sainte-Beuve's) are scarcely exceeded by the product of any other essay-writer in an essay-writing age. And the popular judgment which has insisted upon holding to this supposedly ephemeral work is not far wrong. With all their faults upon them, until we have something better in kind to replace them, we cannot consent to let them go. In one sense, their range is not

6. **Essays.**

wide, for they fall naturally into but two divisions, the historical and the critical. To these Mr. Morison would add a third, the controversial, comprising the four essays on Mill, Sadler, Southey, and Gladstone; but these are comparatively unimportant. In another sense, however, their range is very wide. For each one gathers about a central subject a mass of details that in the hands of any other writer would be bewildering, while the total knowledge that supports the bare arrays of fact and perpetual press of allusions betrays a scope that, to the ordinary mind, is quite beyond comprehension.

And the more remarkable must this work appear when we consider the manner of its production. Most of the essays were published anonymously in the *Edinburgh Review*, a few early ones in Knight's *Quarterly Magazine*, five (those on Atterbury, Bunyan, Goldsmith, Johnson, and Pitt), written late in life, in the *Encyclopædia Britannica*. The writing of them was always an avocation with Macaulay, never a vocation. Those produced during his parliamentary life were usually written in the hours between early rising and breakfast. Some were composed at a distance from his books. He scarcely dreamed of their living beyond the quarter of their publication, certainly not beyond the generation for whose entertainment they were written with all the devices to catch applause and all the disregard of permanent

merit which writing for such a purpose invites. He could scarcely be induced, even after they were pirated and republished in America, to reissue them in a collected edition, with his revision and under his name. These facts should be remembered in mitigation of the severe criticism to which they are sometimes subjected.

Between the historical and the critical essays we are not called upon to decide, though the decision is by no means difficult. Macaulay was essentially a historian, a story-teller, and the historical essay, or short monograph on the events of a single period that usually group themselves about some great statesman or soldier, he made peculiarly his own. He did not invent it, as Mr. Morison points out, but he expanded and improved it until he "left it complete and a thing of power." Fully a score of his essays—more than half the total number—are of this description, the most and the best of them dealing with English history. Chief among them are the essays on Hallam, Temple, the Pitts, Clive, and Warren Hastings. The critical essays—upon Johnson, Addison, Bunyan, and other men of letters—are in every way as admirable reading as the historical. They must take a lower rank only because Macaulay lacked some of the prime requisites of a successful critic—broad and deep sympathies, refined tastes, and nice perception of the more delicate tints and shadings that count for almost everything in a work of high art. His

critical judgments are likely to be blunt, positive, and superficial. But they are never actually shallow and rarely without a modicum of truth. And they are never uninteresting. For, true to his narrative instinct, he always interweaves biography. And besides, the essays have the same rhetorical qualities that mark with distinction all the prose he has written, that is to say, the same masterly method and the same compelling style. It is to this method and style, that, after our rapid review of Macaulay's aims and accomplishments, we are now ready to turn.

There were two faculties of Macaulay's mind that set his work far apart from other work in the same field—the faculties of **7. Organizing Faculty.** organization and illustration. He saw things in their right relation and he knew how to make others see them thus. If he was describing, he never thrust minor details into the foreground. If he was narrating, he never “got ahead of his story.” The importance of this is not sufficiently recognized. Many writers do not know what organization means. They do not know that in all great and successful literary work it is nine-tenths of the labor. Yet consider a moment. History is a very complex thing: divers events may be simultaneous in their occurrence; or one crisis may be slowly evolving from many causes in many places. It is no light task to tell these things one after another and yet leave a unified impression, to

take up a dozen new threads in succession without tangling them and without losing the old ones, and to lay them all down at the right moment and without confusion. Such is the narrator's task, and it was at this task that Macaulay proved himself a past master. He could dispose of a number of trivial events in a single sentence. Thus, for example, runs his account of the dramatist Wycherley's naval career: "He embarked, was present at a battle, and celebrated it, on his return, in a copy of verses too bad for the bellman." On the other hand, when it is a question of a great crisis, like the impeachment of Warren Hastings, he knew how to prepare for it with elaborate ceremony and to portray it in a scene of the highest dramatic power.

This faculty of organization shows itself in what we technically name structure; and logical and rhetorical structure may be studied at their very best in his work. His essays are perfect units, made up of many parts, systems within systems, that play together without clog or friction. You can take them apart like a watch and put them together again. But try to rearrange the parts and the mechanism is spoiled. Each essay has its subdivisions, which in turn are groups of paragraphs. And each paragraph is a unit. Take the first paragraph of the essay on Milton: the word *manuscript* appears in the first sentence, and it reappears in the last; clearly the paragraph deals



with a single very definite topic. And so with all. Of course the unity manifests itself in a hundred ways, but it is rarely wanting. Most frequently it takes the form of an expansion of a topic given in the first sentence, or a preparation for a topic to be announced only in the last. These initial and final sentences—often in themselves both aphoristic and memorable—serve to mark with the utmost clearness the different stages in the progress of the essay.

Illustration is of more incidental service, but as used by Macaulay becomes highly organic. For

8. **Illustrating Faculty.** his illustrations are not far-fetched or laboriously worked out. They seem to be of one piece with his story or his argument. His mind was quick to detect resemblances and analogies. He was ready with a comparison for everything, sometimes with half a dozen. For example, Addison's essays, he has occasion to say, were different every day of the week, and yet, to his mind, each day like something—like Horace, like Lucian, like the "Tales of Scheherezade." He draws long comparisons between Walpole and Townshend, between Congreve and Wycherley, between Essex and Villiers, between the fall of the Carovingians and the fall of the Moguls. He follows up a general statement with swarms of instances. Have historians been given to exaggerating the villainy of Machiavelli? Macaulay can name you half a dozen who did so.



Did the writers of Charles's faction delight in making their opponents appear contemptible? "They have told us that Pym broke down in a speech, that Ireton had his nose pulled by Hollis, that the Earl of Northumberland cudgelled Henry Marten, that St. John's manners were sullen, that Vane had an ugly face, that Cromwell had a red nose." Do men fail when they quit their own province for another? Newton failed thus; Bentley failed; Inigo Jones failed; Wilkie failed. In the same way he was ready with quotations. He writes in one of his letters: "It is a dangerous thing for a man with a very strong memory to read very much. I could give you three or four quotations this moment in support of that proposition; but I will bring the vicious propensity under subjection, if I can." Thus we see his mind doing instantly and involuntarily what other minds do with infinite pains, bringing together all things that have a likeness or a common bearing.

Both of these faculties, for organization and for illustration, are to be partially explained by his marvelous memory. As we have

#### 9. Memory.

seen, he read everything, and he seems to have been incapable of forgetting anything. The immense advantage which this gave him over other men is obvious. He who carries his library in his mind wastes no time in turning up references. And surveying the whole field of his knowledge at once, with outlines and details

all in immediate range, he should be able to see things in their natural perspective. Of course it does not follow that a great memory will always enable a man to systematize and synthesize, but it should make it easier for its possessor than for other men, while the power of ready illustration which it affords him is beyond question.

It is precisely these talents that set Macaulay among the simplest and clearest of writers, and that account for much of his popularity. People found that in taking up one of his articles they simply read on and on, never puzzling over the meaning of a sentence, getting the exact force of every statement, and following the trend of thought with scarcely a mental effort. And his natural gift of making things plain he took pains to support by various devices. He constructed his sentences after the simplest normal fashion, subject and verb and object, sometimes inverting for emphasis, but rarely complicating, and always reducing expression to the barest terms. He could write, for example, "One advantage the chaplain had," but it is impossible to conceive of his writing, "Now amid all the discomforts and disadvantages with which the unfortunate chaplain was surrounded, there was one thing which served to offset them, and which, if he chose to take the opportunity of enjoying it, might well be regarded as a positive advantage." One will search his pages in

vain for loose, trailing clauses and involved constructions. His vocabulary was of the same simple nature. He had a complete command of ordinary English and contented himself with that. He rarely ventured beyond the most abridged dictionary. An occasional technical term might be required, but he was shy of the unfamiliar. He would coin no words and he would use no archaisms. Foreign words, when fairly naturalized, he employed sparingly. "We shall have no disputes about diction," he wrote to Napier, Jeffrey's successor; "the English language is not so poor but that I may very well find in it the means of contenting both you and myself."

Now all of these things are wholly admirable, and if they constituted the sum total of Macaulay's

**11. Force.** method, as they certainly do constitute the chief features of it, we

should pass our word of praise and have done. But he did not stop here, and often, unfortunately too often, these things are not thought of at all by those who profess to speak knowingly of his wonderful "style." For in addition to clearness he sought also force, an entirely legitimate object in itself and one in which he was merely giving way to his oratorical or journalistic instinct. Only, his fondness for effect led him too far and into various mannerisms, some of which it is quite impossible to approve. There is no question that they are powerfully effective, as they were meant to be,

often rightly so, and they are exceedingly interesting to study, but for these very reasons the student needs to be warned against attaching to them an undue importance.

Perhaps no one will quarrel with his liking for the specific and the concrete. This indeed is not

mannerism. It is the natural  
**12. Concreteness.** working of the imaginative mind,

of the picturing faculty, and is of the utmost value in forceful, vivid writing. The "ruffs and peaked beards of Theobald's" make an excellent passing allusion to the social life of the time of Queen Elizabeth and James the First. The manœuvres of an army become intensely interesting when we see it "pouring through those wild passes which, worn by mountain torrents and dark with jungle, lead down from the table-land of Mysore to the plains of the Carnatic." A reference to the reputed learning of the English ladies of the sixteenth century is most cunningly put in the picture of "those fair pupils of Ascham and Aylmer who compared, over their embroidery, the styles of Isocrates and Lysias, and who, while the horns were sounding, and the dogs in full cry, sat in the lonely oriel, with eyes riveted to that immortal page which tells how meekly the first great martyr of intellectual liberty took the cup from his weeping gaoler." But when his eagerness for the concretely picturesque leads him to draw a wholly imaginary picture of how it may have come about

that Addison had Steele arrested for debt, we are quite ready to protest.

His tendency to exaggerate, moreover, and his love of paradox, belong in a very different category. Let the reader count

**13. Exaggeration.** the strong words, superlatives, universal propositions, and the like, employed in a characteristic passage, and he will understand at once what is meant. In the essay on Frederic the Great we read: "No sovereign has ever taken possession of a throne by a clearer title. All the politics of the Austrian cabinet had, during twenty years, been directed to one single end—the settlement of the succession. From every person whose rights could be considered as injuriously affected, renunciations in the most solemn form had been obtained." And not content with the ordinary resources of language, he has a trick of raising superlatives themselves, as it were, to the second or third power. "There can be little doubt that this great empire was, even in its best days, far worse governed than the worst governed parts of Europe now are." "What the Italian is to the Englishman, what the Hindoo is to the Italian, what the Bengalee is to other Hindoos, that was Nuncomar to other Bengalees." It is evident that this habit is a positive vice. He tried to exouse it on the ground that there is some inevitable loss in the communication of a fact from one mind to another, and that over-statement is necessary to

correct the error. But the argument is fallacious. Macaulay did not have a monopoly of the imaginative faculty: other men are as much given to exaggeration as he, and stories, as they pass from mouth to mouth, invariably "grow."

His constant resort to antithesis to point his statements is another vice. "That government,"

**14. Antithesis and** he writes of the English rule in  
**Balance.** India, "oppressive as the most

oppressive form of barbarian despotism, was strong with all the strength of civilization." Again: "The Puritan had affected formality; the comic poet laughed at decorum. The Puritan had frowned at innocent diversions; the comic poet took under his patronage the most flagitious excesses. The Puritan had canted; the comic poet blasphemed." And so on, through a paragraph. Somewhat similar to this is his practice of presenting the contrary of a statement before presenting the statement itself, of telling us, for example, what might have been expected to happen before telling us what actually did happen. It is to be noticed that, accompanying this use of antithesis and giving it added force, there is usually a balance of form, that is, a more or less exact correspondence of sentence structure. Given one of Macaulay's sentences presenting the first part of an antithesis, it is sometimes possible to foretell, word for word, what the next sentence will be. Such mechanical writing is certainly not

to be commended as a model of style. Of course it is the abuse of these things and not the mere use of them that constitutes Macaulay's vice.

There are still other formal devices which he uses so freely that we are justified in calling them mannerisms. One of the most

**15. Minor Devices.**

conspicuous is the short sentence, the blunt, unqualified statement of one thing at a time. No one who knows Macaulay would hesitate over the authorship of the following: "The shore was rocky: the night was black: the wind was furious: the waves of the Bay of Biscay ran high." The only wonder is that he did not punctuate it with four periods. He would apparently much rather repeat his subject and make a new sentence than connect his verbs. Instead of writing, "He coaxed and wheedled," he is constantly tempted to write, "He coaxed, he wheedled," even though the practice involves prolonged reiteration of one form. The omission of connectives—rhetorical "asyndeton"—becomes itself a vice. The *ands*, *thens*, *therefores*, *howevers*, the reader must supply for himself. This demands alertness and helps to sustain interest; and while it may occasion a momentary perplexity, it will rarely do so when the reader comes to know the style and to read it with the right swing. But it all goes to enforce what Mr. John Morley calls the "unlovely staccato" of the style. It strikes harsh on the ear and on the brain, and from a piquant stimulant becomes an



intolerable weariness. Separate things get emphasis, but the nice gradations and relations are sacrificed.

After all, though we stigmatize these things as "devices," intimating that they were mechanical

and arbitrary, we must regard  
**16. Dogmatism.** them as partly temperamental.

Macaulay's mind was not subtle in its working and was not given to making nice distinctions. He cared chiefly for bold outlines and broad effects. Truth, to his mind, was sharply defined from falsehood, right from wrong, good from evil. Everything could be divided from everything else, labeled, and pigeon-holed. And he was very certain, in the fields which he chose to enter, that he knew where to draw the dividing lines. Positiveness, self-confidence, are written all over his work. Set for a moment against his method the method of Matthew Arnold. This is how Arnold tries to point out a defect in modern English society: "And, owing to the same causes, does not a subtle criticism lead us to make, even on the good looks and politeness of our aristocratic class, and even of the most fascinating half of that class, the feminine half, the one qualifying remark, that in these charming gifts there should perhaps be, for ideal perfection, a shade more *soul*?" Note the careful approach, the constant, anxious qualification, working up to a climax in the almost painful hesitation of "a shade—more—*soul*."



Imagine, if you can, Macaulay, the rough rider, he of the "stamping emphasis," winding into a truth like that. But indeed it is quite impossible to imagine Macaulay's having any truth at all to enunciate about so ethereal an attribute as this same *soul*.

We have come well into the region of Macaulay's defects. Clearness, we have seen, he had in a

**17. Ornament,** remarkable degree. Force he also

**Rhythm.** had in a remarkable degree,

though he frequently abused the means of displaying it. But genuine beauty, it is scarcely too much to say, he had not at all. Of course, much depends upon our definitions. We do not mean to deny to his writings all elements of charm. The very ease of his mastery over so many resources of composition gives pleasure to the reader. His frequent picturesqueness we have granted. He can be genuinely figurative, though his figures often incline to showiness. And above all he has a certain sense for rhythm. He can write long, sweeping sentences—periods that rise and descend with the feeling, and that come to a stately or graceful close. The sentence cited above about the learning of women in the sixteenth century may be taken as an example. Or read the sketch of the Catholic Church in the third paragraph of the essay on Von Ranke's History of the Popes, or the conclusion of the essay on Lord Holland, or better still the conclusion of the somewhat juvenile

essay on Mitford's Greece, with its glowing tribute to Athens and its famous picture of the "single naked fisherman washing his nets in the river of the ten thousand masts." But at best it is the rhythm of mere declamation, swinging and pompous. There is no fine flowing movement, nothing like the entrancing glides of a waltz or the airy steps of a minuet, but only a steady march to the interminable and monotonous beat of the drum. For real music, sweetness, subtle and involved harmony, lingering cadences, we turn to any one of a score of prose writers—Sir Thomas Browne, Addison, Burke, Lamb, De Quincey, Hawthorne, Ruskin, Pater, Stevenson—before we turn to Macaulay. Nor is there any other mere grace of composition in which he can be said to excel.

There is no blame in the matter. We are only trying to note dispassionately the defects as well as the excellences of a man who

**18. Temperamental Defects.** was not a universal genius. It would be easy to point out much greater defects than any yet mentioned, defects that go deeper than style. One or two indeed we are obliged to mention. There is the strain of coarseness often to be noted in his writing, showing itself now in an abusive epithet, now in a vulgar catch-word, now in a sally of humor bordering on the ribald. It is never grossly offensive, but it is none the less wounding to a delicate sensibility. Then there is the Philistine attitude, which Mr. Arnold spent so

much of his life in combating, the attitude of the complacent, self-satisfied Englishman, who sees in the British constitution and the organization of the British empire the best of all possible governments, and in the material and commercial progress of the age the best of all possible civilizations. And there is the persistent refusal to treat questions of really great moral significance upon any kind of moral basis. The absolute right or wrong of an act Macaulay will avoid discussing if he possibly can, and take refuge in questions of policy, of sheer profit and loss. We shall not blame him severely for even these serious shortcomings. On the first point we remember that he was deliberately playing to his audience, consciously writing down to the level of his public. On the second we realize that he was a practical politician and that he never could have been such with the idealism of a Carlyle or a Ruskin. And on the third we remember that his own private life was one of affectionate sacrifice and his public life absolutely stainless. He could vote away his own income when moral conviction demanded it. Besides, even when he was only arguing, "policy" was always on the side of the right. What blame is left? Only this—that he should have pandered to any public, compromising his future fame for an ephemeral applause, and that he should have so far wronged the mass of his readers as to suppose that arguments based upon policy would be more

acceptable to them than arguments based upon sound moral principles. That he was something of a Philistine and not wholly a "child of light," may be placed to his discount but not to his discredit. The total indictment is small and is mentioned here only in the interests of impartial criticism.

It remains only to sum up the literary significance of Macaulay's work. Nearly all of that

**19. Literary Significance.** work, we must remember, lies outside of the field of what we know as "pure literature." Pure literature—poetry, drama, fiction—is a pure artistic or imaginative product with entertainment as its chief aim. Though it may instruct incidentally, it does not merely inform. It is the work of creative genius. Macaulay's essays were meant to inform. Characters and situations are delineated in them, but not created. History and criticism are often not literature at all. They become literature only by revealing an imaginative insight and clothing themselves in artistic form. Macaulay's essays have done this; they engage the emotions as well as the intellect. They were meant for records, for storehouses of information; but they are also works of art, and therefore they live intact while the records of equally industrious but less gifted historians are revised and replaced. Thus by their artistic quality, *style* in a word, they are removed from the shelves of history to the shelves of literature.

It becomes plain, perhaps, why at the outset we spoke of style. One hears little about Shakspeare's style, or Scott's, or Shelley's. Where there are matters of larger interest—character, dramatic situations, passion, lofty conceptions, abstract truth—there is little room for attention to so superficial a quality, or rather to a quality that has some such superficial aspects. But in the work of less creative writers, a purely literary interest, if it be aroused at all, must centre chiefly in this. And herein lies Macaulay's significance to the literary world to-day.

Upon the professional writers of that world, as distinct from the readers, his influence has been **20. Influence on Journalism.** no less than profound, partly for evil, but chiefly, we think (Mr. Morley notwithstanding), for good. His name was mentioned at the beginning of our sketch in connection with journalism. It is just because the literary development of our age has moved so rapidly along this line, that Macaulay's influence has been so far-reaching. The journalist must have an active pen. He cannot indulge in meditation while the ink dries. He cannot stop to arrange and rearrange his ideas, to study the cadence of his sentences, to seek for the unique or the suggestive word. What Macaulay did was to furnish the model of just such a style as would meet this need—ready, easy, rapid, yet never loose or obscure. He seems to have found his way by

instinct to all those expedients which make writing easy—short, direct sentences, commonplace words, constant repetition and balance of form, adapted quotations, and stock phrases from the Bible or Prayer-Book or from the language of the professions, politics, and trade. This style he impressed upon a generation of journalists that was ready to receive it and keenly alive to its value.

The word *journalist* is scarcely broad enough to cover the class of writers here meant. For the class includes, in addition to the great "press tribe" from editor to reporter and reviewer, every writer of popular literature, every one who appeals to a miscellaneous public, who undertakes to make himself a medium between special intelligence and general intelligence. And there are thousands of these writers to-day—in editorial chairs, on magazine staffs, on political, educational, and scientific commissions—who are consciously or unconsciously employing the convenient instrument which Macaulay did so much toward perfecting seventy-five years ago. The evidence is on every hand. One listens to a lecture by a scientist who, it is quite possible, never read a paragraph of Macaulay, and catches, before long, words like these: "There is no reversal of nature's processes. The world has come from a condition of things essentially different from the present. It is moving toward a condition of things essentially different from the present." Or one

turns to an editorial in a daily paper and reads: "It will be ever thus with all the movements in this country to which a revolutionary interpretation can be attached. The mass and body of the people of the United States are a level-headed, sober-minded people. They are an upright and a solvent people. They love their government. They are proud of their government. Its credit is dear to them. Enlisted in its cause, party lines sag loose upon the voters or disappear altogether from their contemplation." The ear-marks are very plain to see.

We would not make the mistake of attributing too many and too large effects to a single cause. Life and art are very complex matters and the agencies at work are quite beyond our calculation. There is always danger of exaggerating the importance of a single influence. The trend of things is not easily disturbed—the history of the world never yet turned upon the cast of a die or the length of a woman's nose. In spite of Jeffrey's testimony—and it cannot be lightly brushed aside—we are not ready to give Macaulay the whole credit for inventing this style. Nor do we believe that journalism would be materially different from what it is to-day, even though Macaulay had never written a line. But it does not seem too much to admit that the first vigorous impulse came from him and that the manner is deservedly associated with his name.

In itself, as has been pointed out, it is not a

beautiful thing. It is a thing of mannerisms, and these we have not hesitated to call vices. From the point of view of literature they are vices, blemishes on the face of true art. But the style is useful none the less. The ready writer is not concerned about beauty, he does not profess to be an artist. He has intelligence to convey, and the simplest and clearest medium is for his purpose the best. He will continue to use this serviceable medium nor trouble himself about its "unlovely staccato" and its gaudy tinsel. Meanwhile the literary artist may pursue his way in search of a more elusive music and a more iridescent beauty, satisfied with the tithe of Macaulay's popularity if only he can attain to some measure of his own ideals.

But Macaulay himself should be remembered for his real greatness. The facile imitator of the tricks of his pen should beware of the ingratitude of assuming that these were the measure of his mind. These vices are virtues in their place, but they are not high virtues, and they are not the virtues that made Macaulay great. His greatness lay in the qualities that we have tried to insist upon from the first, qualities that are quite beyond imitation, the power of bringing instantly into one mental focus the accumulations of a prodigious memory, and the range of vision, the grasp of detail, and the insight into men, measures, and events, that enabled him to reduce to beautiful order the chaos of human history.

21. Real Great-  
ness.



## CHRONOLOGY AND BIBLIOGRAPHY

---

1800. Macaulay born, Oct. 25, at Rothley Temple, Leicestershire.
1818. Entered Trinity College, Cambridge. (B. A., 1822; M. A., 1825.)
1823. Began contributing to *Knight's Quarterly Magazine*.
1824. Elected Fellow of Trinity.
1825. Began contributing to *Edinburgh Review*.
1826. Called to the Bar.
1830. Entered Parliament.
1831. Speeches on Reform Bill.
1834. Went to India as member of the Supreme Council.
1837. Indian Penal Code.
1838. Returned to England. Tour in Italy.
1839. Elected to Parliament for Edinburgh. Secretary at War.
1842. Lays of Ancient Rome.
1843. Collected edition of Essays.
1848. History of England, vols. i. and ii. (Vols. iii. and iv. 1855; vol. v. 1861.)
1852. Failure in health.
1857. Made Baron Macaulay of Rothley.
1859. Died Dec. 28. (Interred in Westminster Abbey.)

The standard edition of Macaulay's works is that edited by his sister, Lady Trevelyan, in eight volumes, and published at London, 1866; reprinted at New York, by Harper Bros. The authorized biography is that by his nephew, G. O. Trevelyan, a book which is exceedingly interesting and which takes high rank among English

biographies. J. Cotter Morison's life in the English Men of Letters series is briefer, is both biographical and critical, and is in every way an admirable work. There are also the articles in the *Encyclopædia Britannica*, by Mark Pattison, and in the *Dictionary of National Biography*, by Mr. Leslie Stephen. The best critical essays are those by Mr. Leslie Stephen in *Hours in a Library*, by Mr. John Morley in *Miscellanies*, and by Walter Bagehot in *Literary Studies*.

## MILTON

*Joannis Miltoni, Angli, de Doctrinâ Christianâ libri duo posthumi.* A treatise on Christian Doctrine, compiled from the Holy Scriptures alone. By JOHN MILTON, translated from the original by Charles R. Sumner, M.A., etc., etc., 1825.

Towards the close of the year 1823, Mr. Lemon, deputy keeper of the state papers, in the course of his researches among the presses of his office, met with a large Latin manuscript. With it were  
5 found corrected copies of the foreign despatches written by Milton while he filled the office of Secretary, and several papers relating to the Popish Trials and the Rye-house Plot. The whole was wrapped up in an envelope, superscribed *To Mr.*  
10 *Skinner, Merchant.* On examination the large manuscript proved to be the long lost Essay on the Doctrines of Christianity, which, according to Wood and Toland, Milton finished after the Restoration, and deposited with Cyriac Skinner.  
15 Skinner, it is well known, held the same political opinions with his illustrious friend. It is therefore probable, as Mr. Lemon conjectures, that he may have fallen under the suspicions of the government

during that persecution of the Whigs which followed the dissolution of the Oxford Parliament, and that, in consequence of a general seizure of his papers, this work may have been brought to the office in which it has been found. But what-  
5  
ever the adventures of the manuscript may have been, no doubt can exist that it is a genuine relic of the great poet.

Mr. Sumner, who was commanded by His Majesty to edit and translate the treatise, has  
10  
acquitted himself of his task in a manner honorable to his talents and to his character. His version is not, indeed, very easy or elegant; but it is entitled to the praise of clearness and fidelity. His notes abound with interesting quotations, and  
15  
have the rare merit of really elucidating the text. The preface is evidently the work of a sensible and candid man, firm in his own religious opinions, and tolerant towards those of others.

The book itself will not add much to the fame  
20  
of Milton. It is, like all his Latin works, well written, though not exactly in the style of the prize essays of Oxford and Cambridge. There is no elaborate imitation of classical antiquity, no scrupulous purity, none of the ceremonial clean-  
25  
ness which characterizes the diction of our academic Pharisees. The author does not attempt to polish and brighten his composition into the Ciceronian gloss and brilliancy. He does not, in short, sacrifice sense and spirit to pedantic  
30

refinements. The nature of his subject compelled him to use many words

“That would have made Quintilian stare and gasp.”

But he writes with as much ease and freedom as if Latin were his mother tongue; and, where he is least happy, his failure seems to arise from the carelessness of a native, not from the ignorance of a foreigner. We may apply to him what Denham with great felicity says of Cowley. He wears the garb, but not the clothes, of the ancients.

Throughout the volume are discernible the traces of a powerful and independent mind, emancipated from the influence of authority, and devoted to the search of truth. Milton professes to form his system from the Bible alone; and his digest of scriptural texts is certainly among the best that have appeared. But he is not always so happy in his inferences as in his citations.

Some of the heterodox doctrines which he avows seem to have excited considerable amazement, particularly his Arianism, and his theory on the subject of polygamy. Yet we can scarcely conceive that any person could have read the Paradise Lost without suspecting him of the former; nor do we think that any reader, acquainted with the history of his life, ought to be much startled at the latter. The opinions which he has expressed respecting the nature of the Deity, the eternity of matter, and the observation of the Sabbath, might, we think, have caused more just surprise.

But we will not go into the discussion of these points. The book, were it far more orthodox or far more heretical than it is, would not much edify or corrupt the present generation. The men of our time are not to be converted or perverted by quartos. A few more days, and this essay will follow the *Defensio Populi* to the dust and silence of the upper shelf. The name of its author, and the remarkable circumstances attending its publication, will secure to it a certain degree of attention. For a month or two it will occupy a few minutes of chat in every drawing-room, and a few columns in every magazine; and it will then, to borrow the elegant language of the playbills, be withdrawn, to make room for the forthcoming novelties.

We wish, however, to avail ourselves of the interest, transient as it may be, which this work has excited. The dexterous Capuchins never choose to preach on the life and miracles of a saint till they have awakened the devotional feelings of their auditors by exhibiting some relic of him, a thread of his garment, a lock of his hair, or a drop of his blood. On the same principle, we intend to take advantage of the late interesting discovery, and, while this memorial of a great and good man is still in the hands of all, to say something of his moral and intellectual qualities. Nor, we are convinced, will the severest of our readers blame us if, on an occasion like the present, we turn for a

short time from the topics of the day, to commemorate, in all love and reverence, the genius and virtues of John Milton, the poet, the statesman, the philosopher, the glory of English literature, the champion and the martyr of English liberty.

( It is by his poetry that Milton is best known; and it is of his poetry that we wish first to speak. By the general suffrage of the civilized world, his place has been assigned among the greatest masters of the art. His detractors, however, though outvoted, have not been silenced. There are many critics, and some of great name, who contrive in the same breath to extol the poems and to decry the poet. The works they acknowledge, considered in themselves, may be classed among the noblest productions of the human mind. But they will not allow the author to rank with those great men who, born in the infancy of civilization, supplied, by their own powers, the want of instruction, and, though destitute of models themselves, bequeathed to posterity models which defy imitation. Milton, it is said, inherited what his predecessors created; he lived in an enlightened age; he received a finished education; and we must, therefore, if we would form a just estimate of his powers, make large deductions in consideration of these advantages.

We venture to say, on the contrary, paradoxical as the remark may appear, that no poet has ever had to struggle with more unfavorable circum-

stances than Milton. He doubted, as he has himself owned, whether he had not been born "an age too late." For this notion Johnson has thought fit to make him the butt of much clumsy ridicule. The poet, we believe, understood the nature of his art better than the critic. He knew that his poetical genius derived no advantage from the civilization which surrounded him, or from the learning which he had acquired; and he looked back with something like regret to the ruder age of simple words and vivid impressions.

We think that, as civilization advances, poetry almost necessarily declines. Therefore, though we fervently admire those great works of imagination which have appeared in dark ages, we do not admire them the more because they have appeared in dark ages. On the contrary, we hold that the most wonderful and splendid proof of genius is a great poem produced in a civilized age. We cannot understand why those who believe in that orthodox article of literary faith, that the earliest poets are generally the best, should wonder at the rule as if it were the exception. Surely the uniformity of the phenomenon indicates a corresponding uniformity in the cause.

The fact is, that common observers reason from the progress of the experimental sciences to that of the imitative arts. The improvement of the former is gradual and slow. Ages are spent in collecting materials, ages more in separating and combining



them. Even when a system has been formed, there is still something to add, to alter, or to reject. Every generation enjoys the use of a vast hoard bequeathed to it by antiquity, and transmits  
5 that hoard, augmented by fresh acquisitions, to future ages. In these pursuits, therefore, the first speculators lie under great disadvantages, and, even when they fail, are entitled to praise. Their pupils, with far inferior intellectual powers, speed-  
10 ily surpass them in actual attainments. Every girl who has read Mrs. Marcet's little dialogues on Political Economy could teach Montague or Walpole many lessons in finance. Any intelligent man may now, by resolutely applying himself for a few  
15 years to mathematics, learn more than the great Newton knew after half a century of study and meditation.

But it is not thus with music, with painting, or with sculpture. Still less is it thus with poetry.  
20 The progress of refinement rarely supplies these arts with better objects of imitation. It may indeed improve the instruments which are necessary to the mechanical operations of the musician, the sculptor, and the painter. But language, the  
25 machine of the poet, is best fitted for his purpose in its rudest state. Nations, like individuals, first perceive and then abstract. They advance from particular images to general terms. Hence the vocabulary of an enlightened society is philo-  
30 sophical, that of a half-civilized people is poetical.

This change in the language of men is partly the cause and partly the effect of a corresponding change in the nature of their intellectual operations, of a change by which science gains and poetry loses. Generalization is necessary to the advancement of knowledge; but particularity is indispensable to the creations of the imagination. In proportion as men know more and think more, they look less at individuals and more at classes. They therefore make better theories and worse poems. They give us vague phrases instead of images, and personified qualities instead of men. They may be better able to analyze human nature than their predecessors. But analysis is not the business of the poet. His office is to portray, not to dissect. He may believe in a moral sense, like Shaftesbury; he may refer all human actions to self-interest, like Helvetius; or he may never think about the matter at all. His creed on such subjects will no more influence his poetry, properly so called, than the notions which a painter may have conceived respecting the lachrymal glands, or the circulation of the blood, will affect the tears of his Niobe, or the blushes of his Aurora. If Shakespeare had written a book on the motives of human actions, it is by no means certain that it would have been a good one. It is extremely improbable that it would have contained half so much able reasoning on the subject as is to be found in the Fable of the Bees. But could

Mandeville have created an Iago? Well as he knew how to resolve characters into their elements, would he have been able to combine those elements in such a manner as to make up a man, a real,  
 5 living, individual man?

Perhaps no person can be a poet, or can even enjoy poetry, without a certain unsoundness of mind, if anything which gives so much pleasure ought to be called unsoundness. By poetry we  
 10 mean not all writing in verse, nor even all good writing in verse. Our definition excludes many metrical compositions which, on other grounds, deserve the highest praise. By poetry we mean the art of employing words in such a manner  
 15 as to produce an illusion on the imagination, the art of doing by means of words what the painter does by means of colors. Thus the greatest of poets has described it, in lines universally admired for the vigor and felicity of their diction, and still  
 20 more valuable on account of the just notion which they convey of the art in which he excelled:—

“As imagination bodies forth

The forms of things unknown, the poet's pen

Turns them to shapes, and gives to airy nothing

25 A local habitation and a name.”

These are the fruits of the “fine frenzy” which he ascribes to the poet,—a fine frenzy, doubtless, but still a frenzy. Truth, indeed, is essential to poetry; but it is the truth of madness. The

reasonings are just; but the premises are false. After the first suppositions have been made, everything ought to be consistent; but those first suppositions require a degree of credulity which almost amounts to a partial and temporary derangement of the intellect. Hence of all people children are the most imaginative. They abandon themselves without reserve to every illusion. Every image which is strongly presented to their mental eye produces on them the effect of reality. No man, whatever his sensibility may be, is ever affected by Hamlet or Lear, as a little girl is affected by the story of poor Red Riding-hood. She knows that it is all false, that wolves cannot speak, that there are no wolves in England. Yet in spite of her knowledge she believes; she weeps; she trembles; she dares not go into a dark room lest she should feel the teeth of the monster at her throat. Such is the despotism of the imagination over uncultivated minds.

In a rude state of society men are children with a greater variety of ideas. It is therefore in such a state of society that we may expect to find the poetical temperament in its highest perfection. In an enlightened age there will be much intelligence, much science, much philosophy, abundance of just classification and subtle analysis, abundance of wit and eloquence, abundance of verses, and even of good ones; but little poetry. Men will judge and compare; but they will not create. They will

talk about the old poets, and comment on them, and to a certain degree enjoy them. But they will scarcely be able to conceive the effect which poetry produced on their ruder ancestors, the  
5 agony, the ecstasy, the plenitude of belief. The Greek Rhapsodists, according to Plato, could scarce recite Homer without falling into convulsions. The Mohawk hardly feels the scalping-knife while he shouts his death-song. The power which the  
10 ancient bards of Wales and Germany exercised over their auditors seems to modern readers almost miraculous. Such feelings are very rare in a civilized community, and most rare among those who participate most in its improvements. They  
15 linger longest among the peasantry.

Poetry produces an illusion on the eye of the mind, as a magic lantern produces an illusion on the eye of the body. And, as the magic lantern acts best in a dark room, poetry effects its purpose  
20 most completely in a dark age. As the light of knowledge breaks in upon its exhibitions, as the outlines of certainty become more and more definite, and the shades of probability more and more distinct, the hues and lineaments of the phan-  
25 toms which the poet calls up grow fainter and fainter. We cannot unite the incompatible advantages of reality and deception, the clear discernment of truth and the exquisite enjoyment of fiction.

30 He who, in an enlightened and literary society,

aspires to be a great poet, must first become a little child. He must take to pieces the whole web of his mind. He must unlearn much of that knowledge which has perhaps constituted hitherto his chief title to superiority. His very talents will be a hindrance to him. His difficulties will be proportioned to his proficiency in the pursuits which are fashionable among his contemporaries; and that proficiency will in general be proportioned to the vigor and activity of his mind. And it is well if, after all his sacrifices and exertions, his works do not resemble a lisping man or a modern ruin. We have seen in our own time great talents, intense labor, and long meditation, employed in this struggle against the spirit of the age, and employed, we will not say absolutely in vain, but with dubious success and feeble applause.

If these reasonings be just, no poet has ever triumphed over greater difficulties than Milton. He received a learned education: he was a profound and elegant classical scholar; he had studied all the mysteries of Rabbinical literature; he was intimately acquainted with every language of modern Europe from which either pleasure or information was then to be derived. He was perhaps the only great poet of later times who has been distinguished by the excellence of his Latin verse. The genius of Petrarch was scarcely of the first order; and his poems in the ancient language,

though much praised by those who have never read them, are wretched compositions. Cowley, with all his admirable wit and ingenuity, had little imagination; nor indeed do we think his classical  
5 diction comparable to that of Milton. The authority of Johnson is against us on this point. But Johnson had studied the bad writers of the middle ages till he had become utterly insensible to the Augustan elegance, and was as ill-qualified to  
10 judge between two Latin styles as a habitual drunkard to set up for a wine-taster.

Versification in a dead language is an exotic, a far-fetched, costly, sickly imitation of that which elsewhere may be found in healthful and spontaneous  
15 perfection. The soils on which this rarity flourishes are in general as ill-suited to the production of vigorous native poetry as the flower-pots of a hot-house to the growth of oaks. That the author of the *Paradise Lost* should have  
20 written the *Epistle to Manso* was truly wonderful. Never before were such marked originality and such exquisite mimicry found together. Indeed, in all the Latin poems of Milton the artificial manner indispensable to such works is admirably preserved,  
25 while, at the same time, his genius gives to them a peculiar charm, an air of nobleness and freedom, which distinguishes them from all other writings of the same class. They remind us of the amusements of those angelic warriors who composed the  
30 cohort of Gabriel:—



“About him exercised heroic games

The unarmed youth of heaven. But o'er their heads  
Celestial armory, shield, helm, and spear,  
Hung high, with diamond flaming and with gold.”

We cannot look upon the sportive exercises for 5  
which the genius of Milton ungirds itself, without  
catching a glimpse of the gorgeous and terrible  
panoply which it is accustomed to wear. The  
strength of his imagination triumphed over every 10  
obstacle. So intense and ardent was the fire of  
his mind, that it not only was not suffocated 15  
beneath the weight of fuel, but penetrated the  
whole superincumbent mass with its own heat and  
radiance.

It is not our intention to attempt anything like 15  
a complete examination of the poetry of Milton.  
The public has long been agreed as to the merit  
of the most remarkable passages, the incomparable  
harmony of the numbers, and the excellence of 20  
that style which no rival has been able to equal and  
no parodist to degrade, which displays in their  
highest perfection the idiomatic powers of the  
English tongue, and to which every ancient and  
every modern language has contributed something  
of grace, of energy, or of music. In the vast field 25  
of criticism on which we are entering, innumerable  
reapers have already put their sickles. Yet the  
harvest is so abundant that the negligent search of  
a straggling gleaner may be rewarded with a sheaf.

The most striking characteristic of the poetry of 30



Milton is the extreme remoteness of the associations by means of which it acts on the reader. Its effect is produced, not so much by what it expresses, as by what it suggests; not so much by the ideas which it directly conveys, as by other ideas which are connected with them. He electrifies the mind through conductors. The most unimaginative man must understand the Iliad. Homer gives him no choice, and requires from him no exertion, but takes the whole upon himself, and sets the images in so clear a light that it is impossible to be blind to them. The works of Milton cannot be comprehended or enjoyed unless the mind of the reader coöperate with that of the writer. He does not paint a finished picture, or play for a mere passive listener. He sketches, and leaves others to fill up the outline. He strikes the key-note, and expects his hearer to make out the melody.

We often hear of the magical influence of poetry. The expression in general means nothing; but, applied to the writings of Milton, it is most appropriate. His poetry acts like an incantation. Its merit lies less in its obvious meaning than in its occult power. There would seem, at first sight, to be no more in his words than in other words. But they are words of enchantment. No sooner are they pronounced, than the past is present and the distant near. New forms of beauty start at once into existence, and all the burial-places of the

memory give up their dead. Change the structure of the sentence, substitute one synonym for another, and the whole effect is destroyed. The spell loses its power; and he who should then hope to conjure with it would find himself as much mistaken as Cassim in the Arabian tale, when he stood crying, "Open Wheat," "Open Barley," to the door which obeyed no sound but "Open Sesame." The miserable failure of Dryden in his attempt to translate into his own diction some parts of the *Paradise Lost*, is a remarkable instance of this.

In support of these observations we may remark, that scarcely any passages in the poems of Milton are more generally known, or more frequently repeated, than those which are little more than muster-rolls of names. They are not always more appropriate or more melodious than other names. But they are charmed names. Every one of them is the first link in a long chain of associated ideas. Like the dwelling-place of our infancy revisited in manhood, like the song of our country heard in a strange land, they produce upon us an effect wholly independent of their intrinsic value. One transports us back to a remote period of history. Another places us among the novel scenes and manners of a distant region. A third evokes all the dear classical recollections of childhood, the school-room, the dog-eared *Virgil*, the holiday, and the prize. A fourth brings before us the splendid

phantoms of chivalrous romance, the trophied lists, the embroidered housings, the quaint devices, the haunted forests, the enchanted gardens, the achievements of enamoured knights, and the  
5 smiles of rescued princesses.

In none of the works of Milton is his peculiar manner more happily displayed than in the Allegro and the Penseroso. It is impossible to conceive that the mechanism of language can be brought to  
10 a more exquisite degree of perfection. These poems differ from others as a jar of roses differs from ordinary rose-water, the close-packed essence from the thin, diluted mixture. They are indeed not so much poems as collections of hints, from  
15 each of which the reader is to make out a poem for himself. Every epithet is a text for a stanza.

The Comus and the Samson Agonistes are works which, though of very different merit, offer some marked points of resemblance. Both are lyric  
20 poems in the form of plays. There are perhaps no two kinds of composition so essentially dissimilar as the drama and the ode. The business of the dramatist is to keep himself out of sight, and to let nothing appear but his characters. As soon as  
25 he attracts notice to his personal feelings, the illusion is broken. The effect is as unpleasant as that which is produced on the stage by the voice of a prompter or the entrance of a scene-shifter. Hence it was that the tragedies of Byron were his  
30 least successful performances. They resemble

those pasteboard pictures invented by the friend of children, Mr. Newbery, in which a single movable head goes round twenty different bodies, so that the same face looks out upon us, successively, from the uniform of a hussar, the furs of a judge, and the rags of a beggar. In all the characters, patriots and tyrants, haters and lovers, the frown and sneer of Harold were discernible in an instant. But this species of egotism, though fatal to the drama, is the inspiration of the ode. It is the part of the lyric poet to abandon himself, without reserve, to his own emotions.

Between these hostile elements many great men have endeavored to effect an amalgamation, but never with complete success. The Greek Drama, on the model of which the Samson was written, sprang from the Ode. The dialogue was ingrafted on the chorus, and naturally partook of its character. The genius of the greatest of the Athenian dramatists coöperated with the circumstances under which tragedy made its first appearance. Æschylus was, head and heart, a lyric poet. In his time the Greeks had far more intercourse with the East than in the days of Homer; and they had not yet acquired that immense superiority in war, in science, and in the arts, which, in the following generation, led them to treat the Asiatics with contempt. From the narrative of Herodotus it should seem that they still looked up, with the veneration of disciples, to Egypt and Assyria. At

this period, accordingly, it was natural that the literature of Greece should be tinged with the Oriental style. And that style, we think, is discernible in the works of Pindar and Æschylus.

5 The latter often reminds us of the Hebrew writers. The book of Job, indeed, in conduct and diction, bears a considerable resemblance to some of his dramas. Considered as plays, his works are absurd; considered as choruses, they are above all  
10 praise. If, for instance, we examine the address of Clytemnestra to Agamemnon on his return, or the description of the seven Argive chiefs, by the principles of dramatic writing, we shall instantly condemn them as monstrous. But if we forget the  
15 characters, and think only of the poetry, we shall admit that it has never been surpassed in energy and magnificence. Sophocles made the Greek drama as dramatic as was consistent with its original form. His portraits of men have a sort of  
20 similarity; but it is the similarity not of a painting, but of a bas-relief. It suggests a resemblance; but it does not produce an illusion. Euripides attempted to carry the reform further. But it was a task far beyond his powers, perhaps  
25 beyond any powers. Instead of correcting what was bad, he destroyed what was excellent. He substituted crutches for stilts, bad sermons for good odes.

Milton, it is well known, admired Euripides  
30 highly; much more highly than, in our opinion,

Euripides deserved. Indeed, the caresses which this partiality leads our countryman to bestow on "sad Electra's poet," sometimes remind us of the beautiful Queen of Fairyland kissing the long ears of Bottom. At all events, there can be no doubt that this veneration for the Athenian, whether just or not, was injurious to the *Samson Agonistes*. Had Milton taken *Æschylus* for his model, he would have given himself up to the lyric inspiration, and poured out profusely all the treasures of his mind, without bestowing a thought on those dramatic proprieties which the nature of the work rendered it impossible to preserve. In the attempt to reconcile things in their own nature inconsistent, he has failed, as every one else must have failed. We cannot identify ourselves with the characters, as in a good play. We cannot identify ourselves with the poet, as in a good ode. The conflicting ingredients, like an acid and an alkali mixed, neutralize each other. We are by no means insensible to the merits of this celebrated piece, to the severe dignity of the style, the graceful and pathetic solemnity of the opening speech, or the wild and barbaric melody which gives so striking an effect to the choral passages. But we think it, we confess, the least successful effort of the genius of Milton.

The *Comus* is framed on the model of the Italian Masque, as the *Samson* is framed on the model of the Greek Tragedy. It is certainly the

noblest performance of the kind which exists in any language. It is as far superior to the Faithful Shepherdess, as the Faithful Shepherdess is to the Aminta or the Aminta to the Pastor Fido.

5 It was well for Milton that he had here no Euripides to mislead him. He understood and loved the literature of modern Italy. But he did not feel for it the same veneration which he entertained for the remains of Athenian  
10 and Roman poetry, consecrated by so many lofty and endearing recollections. The faults, moreover, of his Italian predecessors were of a kind to which his mind had a deadly antipathy. He could stoop to a plain style, sometimes even to a bald  
15 style; but false brilliancy was his utter aversion. His Muse had no objection to a russet attire; but she turned with disgust from the finery of Guarini, as tawdry and as paltry as the rags of a chimney-sweeper on May-day. Whatever ornaments she  
20 wears are of massive gold, not only dazzling to the sight, but capable of standing the severest test of the crucible.

Milton attended in the Comus to the distinction which he afterwards neglected in the Samson. He  
25 made his Masque what it ought to be, essentially lyrical, and dramatic only in semblance. He has not attempted a fruitless struggle against a defect inherent in the nature of that species of composition; and he has therefore succeeded, wherever  
30 success was not impossible. The speeches must be

read as majestic soliloquies; and he who so reads them will be enraptured with their eloquence, their sublimity, and their music. The interruptions of the dialogue, however, impose a constraint upon the writer, and break the illusion of the reader. The finest passages are those which are lyric in form as well as in spirit. "I should much commend," says the excellent Sir Henry Wotton in a letter to Milton, "the tragical part, if the lyrical did not ravish me with a certain Dorique delicacy in your songs and odes, whereunto, I must plainly confess to you, I have seen yet nothing parallel in our language." The criticism was just. It is when Milton escapes from the shackles of the dialogue, when he is discharged from the labor of uniting two incongruous styles, when he is at liberty to indulge his choral raptures without reserve, that he rises even above himself. Then, like his own good Genius bursting from the earthly form and weeds of Thyrsis, he stands forth in celestial freedom and beauty; he seems to cry exultingly,

"Now my task is smoothly done,  
I can fly, or I can run,"

to skim the earth, to soar above the clouds, to bathe in the Elysian dew of the rainbow, and to inhale the balmy smells of nard and cassia, which the musky wings of the zephyr scatter through the cedared alleys of the Hesperides.



There are several of the minor poems of Milton on which we would willingly make a few remarks. Still more willingly would we enter into a detailed examination of that admirable poem, the Paradise Regained, which, strangely enough, is scarcely ever mentioned except as an instance of the blindness of the parental affection which men of letters bear towards the offspring of their intellects. That Milton was mistaken in preferring this work, excellent as it is, to the Paradise Lost, we readily admit. But we are sure that the superiority of the Paradise Lost to the Paradise Regained is not more decided than the superiority of the Paradise Regained to every poem which has since made its appearance. Our limits, however, prevent us from discussing the point at length. We hasten on to that extraordinary production which the general suffrage of critics has placed in the highest class of human compositions.

The only poem of modern times which can be compared with the Paradise Lost is the Divine Comedy. The subject of Milton, in some points, resembled that of Dante; but he has treated it in a widely different manner. We cannot, we think, better illustrate our opinion respecting our own great poet, than by contrasting him with the father of Tuscan literature.

The poetry of Milton differs from that of Dante as the hieroglyphics of Egypt differed from the picture-writing of Mexico. The images which

Dante employs speak for themselves; they stand simply for what they are. Those of Milton have a signification which is often discernible only to the initiated. Their value depends less on what they directly represent than on what they remotely suggest. However strange, however grotesque, may be the appearance which Dante undertakes to describe, he never shrinks from describing it. He gives us the shape, the color, the sound, the smell, the taste; he counts the numbers; he measures the size. His similes are the illustrations of a traveller. Unlike those of other poets, and especially of Milton, they are introduced in a plain, business-like manner; not for the sake of any beauty in the objects from which they are drawn; not for the sake of any ornament which they may impart to the poem; but simply in order to make the meaning of the writer as clear to the reader as it is to himself. The ruins of the precipice which led from the sixth to the seventh circle of hell were like those of the rock which fell into the Adige on the south of Trent. The cataract of Phlegethon was like that of Aqua Cheta at the monastery of St. Benedict. The place where the heretics were confined in burning tombs resembled the vast cemetery of Arles.

Now let us compare with the exact details of Dante the dim intimations of Milton. We will cite a few examples. The English poet has never thought of taking the measure of Satan. He gives

us merely a vague idea of vast bulk. In one passage the fiend lies stretched out, huge in length, floating many a rood, equal in size to the earth-born enemies of Jove, or to the sea-monster which  
5 the mariner mistakes for an island. When he addresses himself to battle against the guardian angels, he stands like Teneriffe or Atlas: his stature reaches the sky. Contrast with these descriptions the lines in which Dante has described  
10 the gigantic spectre of Nimrod. "His face seemed to me as long and as broad as the ball of St. Peter's at Rome; and his other limbs were in proportion; so that the bank, which concealed him from the waist downwards, nevertheless showed so  
15 much of him, that three tall Germans would in vain have attempted to reach to his hair." We are sensible that we do no justice to the admirable style of the Florentine poet. But Mr. Cary's translation is not at hand; and our version, how-  
20 ever rude, is sufficient to illustrate our meaning.

Once more, compare the lazar-house in the eleventh book of the *Paradise Lost* with the last ward of Malebolge in Dante. Milton avoids the loathsome details, and takes refuge in indistinct  
25 but solemn and tremendous imagery: Despair hurrying from couch to couch to mock the wretches with his attendance; Death shaking his dart over them, but, in spite of supplications, delaying to strike. What says Dante? "There  
30 was such a moan there as there would be if all the

sick who, between July and September, are in the hospitals of Valdichiana, and of the Tuscan swamps, and of Sardinia, were in one pit together; and such a stench was issuing forth as is wont to issue from decayed limbs.”

5

We will not take upon ourselves the invidious office of settling precedency between two such writers. Each in his own department is incomparable; and each, we may remark, has wisely, or fortunately, taken a subject adapted to exhibit his peculiar talent to the greatest advantage. The Divine Comedy is a personal narrative. Dante is the eye-witness and ear-witness of that which he relates. He is the very man who has heard the tormented spirits crying out for the second death; who has read the dusky characters on the portal within which there is no hope; who has hidden his face from the terrors of the Gorgon; who has fled from the hooks and the seething pitch of Barbariccia and Draghignazzo. His own hands have grasped the shaggy sides of Lucifer. His own feet have climbed the mountain of expiation. His own brow has been marked by the purifying angel. The reader would throw aside such a tale in incredulous disgust, unless it were told with the strongest air of veracity, with a sobriety even in its horrors, with the greatest precision and multiplicity in its details. The narrative of Milton in this respect differs from that of Dante, as the adventures of Amadis differ from

16

15

20

25

30

those of Gulliver. The author of Amadis would have made his book ridiculous if he had introduced those minute particulars which give such a charm to the work of Swift: the nautical observations, the affected delicacy about names, the official documents transcribed at full length, and all the unmeaning gossip and scandal of the court, springing out of nothing, and tending to nothing. We are not shocked at being told that a man who lived, nobody knows when, saw many very strange sights, and we can easily abandon ourselves to the illusion of the romance. But when Lemuel Gulliver, surgeon, resident at Rotherhithe, tells us of pygmies and giants, flying islands, and philosophizing horses, nothing but such circumstantial touches could produce for a single moment a deception on the imagination.

Of all the poets who have introduced into their works the agency of supernatural beings, Milton has succeeded best. Here Dante decidedly yields to him; and as this is a point on which many rash and ill-considered judgments have been pronounced, we feel inclined to dwell on it a little longer. The most fatal error which a poet can possibly commit in the management of his machinery, is that of attempting to philosophize too much. Milton has been often censured for ascribing to spirits many functions of which spirits must be incapable. But these objections, though sanctioned by eminent names, originate, we ven-

ture to say, in profound ignorance of the art of poetry.

What is spirit? What are our own minds, the portion of spirit with which we are best acquainted? We observe certain phenomena. We cannot explain them into material causes. We therefore infer that there exists something which is not material. But of this something we have no idea. We can define it only by negatives. We can reason about it only by symbols. We use the word; but we have no image of the thing; and the business of poetry is with images, and not with words. The poet uses words indeed; but they are merely the instruments of his art, not its objects. They are the materials which he is to dispose in such a manner as to present a picture to the mental eye. And if they are not so disposed, they are no more entitled to be called poetry than a bale of canvas and a box of colors to be called a painting.

Logicians may reason about abstractions. But the great mass of men must have images. The strong tendency of the multitude in all ages and nations to idolatry can be explained on no other principle. The first inhabitants of Greece, there is reason to believe, worshipped one invisible Deity. But the necessity of having something more definite to adore produced, in a few centuries, the innumerable crowd of gods and goddesses. In like manner the ancient Persians thought it impious to exhibit the Creator under a

human form. Yet even these transferred to the Sun the worship which, in speculation, they considered due only to the Supreme Mind. The history of the Jews is the record of a continued  
5 struggle between pure Theism, supported by the most terrible sanctions, and the strangely fascinating desire of having some visible and tangible object of adoration. Perhaps none of the secondary causes which Gibbon has assigned for the  
10 rapidity with which Christianity spread over the world, while Judaism scarcely ever acquired a proselyte, operated more powerfully than this feeling. God, the uncreated, the incomprehensible, the invisible, attracted few worshippers. A philo-  
15 sopher might admire so noble a conception; but the crowd turned away in disgust from words which presented no image to their minds. It was before Deity, embodied in a human form, walking among men, partaking of their infirmities, leaning  
20 on their bosoms, weeping over their graves, slumbering in the manger, bleeding on the cross, that the prejudices of the Synagogue, and the doubts of the Academy, and the pride of the Portico, and the fasces of the Lictor, and the swords of thirty  
25 legions, were humbled in the dust. Soon after Christianity had achieved its triumph, the principle which had assisted it began to corrupt it. It became a new Paganism. Patron saints assumed the offices of household gods. St. George took  
30 the place of Mars. St. Elmo consoled the



mariner for the loss of Castor and Pollux. The Virgin Mother and Cecilia succeeded to Venus and the Muses. The fascination of sex and loveliness was again joined to that of celestial dignity; and the homage of chivalry was blended with that of religion. Reformers have often made a stand against these feelings; but never with more than apparent and partial success. The men who demolished the images in cathedrals have not always been able to demolish those which were enshrined in their minds. It would not be difficult to show that in politics the same rule holds good. Doctrines, we are afraid, must generally be embodied before they can excite a strong public feeling. The multitude is more easily interested for the most unmeaning badge, or the most insignificant name, than for the most important principle.

From these considerations, we infer that no poet who should affect that metaphysical accuracy for the want of which Milton has been blamed, would escape a disgraceful failure. Still, however, there was another extreme which, though far less dangerous, was also to be avoided. The imaginations of men are in a great measure under the control of their opinions. The most exquisite art of poetical coloring can produce no illusion when it is employed to represent that which is at once perceived to be incongruous and absurd. Milton wrote in an age of philosophers and theologians. It was



necessary, therefore, for him to abstain from giving such a shock to their understandings as might break the charm which it was his object to throw over their imaginations. This is the real explanation of the indistinctness and inconsistency with which he has often been reproached. Dr. Johnson acknowledges that it was absolutely necessary that the spirits should be clothed with material forms. "But," says he, "the poet should have secured the consistency of his system by keeping immateriality out of sight, and seducing the reader to drop it from his thoughts." This is easily said; but what if Milton could not seduce his readers to drop immateriality from their thoughts? What if the contrary opinion had taken so full a possession of the minds of men as to leave no room even for the half-belief which poetry requires? Such we suspect to have been the case. It was impossible for the poet to adopt altogether the material or the immaterial system. He therefore took his stand on the debatable ground. He left the whole in ambiguity. He has doubtless, by so doing, laid himself open to the charge of inconsistency. But, though philosophically in the wrong, we cannot but believe that he was poetically in the right. This task, which almost any other writer would have found impracticable, was easy to him. The peculiar art which he possessed of communicating his meaning circuitously through a long succession of associated ideas, and

of intimating more than he expressed, enabled him to disguise those incongruities which he could not avoid.

Poetry which relates to the beings of another world ought to be at once mysterious and picturesque. That of Milton is so. That of Dante is picturesque indeed beyond any that ever was written. Its effect approaches to that produced by the pencil or the chisel. But it is picturesque to the exclusion of all mystery. This is a fault on the right side, a fault inseparable from the plan of Dante's poem, which, as we have already observed, rendered the utmost accuracy of description necessary. Still it is a fault. The supernatural agents excite an interest; but it is not the interest which is proper to supernatural agents. We feel that we could talk to the ghosts and demons, without any emotion of unearthly awe. We could, like Don Juan, ask them to supper, and eat heartily in their company. Dante's angels are good men with wings. His devils are spiteful, ugly executioners. His dead men are merely living men in strange situations. The scene which passes between the poet and Farinata is justly celebrated. Still, Farinata in the burning tomb is exactly what Farinata would have been at an *auto da fé*. Nothing can be more touching than the first interview of Dante and Beatrice. Yet what is it, but a lovely woman chiding, with sweet austere composure, the lover for whose affection she is grate-

ful, but whose vices she reprobates? The feelings which give the passage its charm would suit the streets of Florence as well as the summit of the Mount of Purgatory.

5 The spirits of Milton are unlike those of almost all other writers. His fiends, in particular, are wonderful creations. They are not metaphysical abstractions. They are not wicked men. They are not ugly  
beasts. They have no horns, no tails, none of the  
10 fee-faw-fum of Tasso and Klopstock. They have just enough in common with human nature to be intelligible to human beings. Their characters are, like their forms, marked by a certain dim resemblance to those of men, but exaggerated to gigantic  
15 dimensions, and veiled in mysterious gloom.

Perhaps the gods and demons of Æschylus may best bear a comparison with the angels and devils of Milton. The style of the Athenian had, as we have remarked, something of the Oriental character; and the same peculiarity may be traced in his  
20 mythology. It has nothing of the amenity and elegance which we generally find in the superstitions of Greece. All is rugged, barbaric, and colossal. The legends of Æschylus seem to har-  
25 monize less with the fragrant groves and graceful porticoes in which his countrymen paid their vows to the God of Light and Goddess of Desire, than with those huge and grotesque labyrinths of eternal  
granite in which Egypt enshrined her mystic  
30 Osiris, or in which Hindostan still bows down to

her seven-headed idols. His favorite gods are those of the elder generation, the sons of heaven and earth, compared with whom Jupiter himself was a stripling and an upstart, the gigantic Titans, and the inexorable Furies. Foremost among his creations of this class stands Prometheus, half fiend, half redeemer, the friend of man, the sullen and implacable enemy of heaven. Prometheus bears undoubtedly a considerable resemblance to the Satan of Milton. In both we find the same impatience of control, the same ferocity, the same unconquerable pride. In both characters also are mingled, though in very different proportions, some kind and generous feelings. Prometheus, however, is hardly superhuman enough. He talks too much of his chains and his uneasy posture; he is rather too much depressed and agitated. His resolution seems to depend on the knowledge which he possesses that he holds the fate of his torturer in his hands, and that the hour of his release will surely come. But Satan is a creature of another sphere. The might of his intellectual nature is victorious over the extremity of pain. Amidst agonies which cannot be conceived without horror, he deliberates, resolves, and even exults. Against the sword of Michael, against the thunder of Jehovah, against the flaming lake, and the marl burning with solid fire, against the prospect of an eternity of unintermitted misery, his spirit bears up unbroken, resting on its own innate energies,

requiring no support from anything external, nor even from hope itself.

To return for a moment to the parallel which we have been attempting to draw between Milton and Dante, we would add that the poetry of these great men has in a considerable degree taken its character from their moral qualities. They are not egotists. They rarely obtrude their idiosyncrasies on their readers. They have nothing in common with those modern beggars for fame who extort a pittance from the compassion of the inexperienced by exposing the nakedness and sores of their minds. Yet it would be difficult to name two writers whose works have been more completely, though undesignedly, colored by their personal feelings.

The character of Milton was peculiarly distinguished by loftiness of spirit; that of Dante by intensity of feeling. In every line of the Divine Comedy we discern the asperity which is produced by pride struggling with misery. There is perhaps no work in the world so deeply and uniformly sorrowful. The melancholy of Dante was no fantastic caprice. It was not, as far as at this distance of time can be judged, the effect of external circumstances. It was from within. Neither love nor glory, neither the conflicts of earth nor the hope of heaven, could dispel it. It turned every consolation and every pleasure into its own nature. It resembled that noxious Sardinian soil of which the

intense bitterness is said to have been perceptible even in its honey. His mind was, in the noble language of the Hebrew poet, "a land of darkness, as darkness itself, and where the light was as darkness." The gloom of his character discolors all the passions of men and all the face of nature, and tinges with its own livid hue the flowers of Paradise and the glories of the eternal throne. All the portraits of him are singularly characteristic. No person can look on the features, noble even to ruggedness, the dark furrows of the cheek, the haggard and woful stare of the eye, the sullen and contemptuous curve of the lip, and doubt that they belong to a man too proud and too sensitive to be happy.

Milton was, like Dante, a statesman and a lover; and, like Dante, he had been unfortunate in ambition and in love. He had survived his health and his sight, the comforts of his home, and the prosperity of his party. Of the great men by whom he had been distinguished at his entrance into life, some had been taken away from the evil to come; some had carried into foreign climates their unconquerable hatred of oppression; some were pining in dungeons; and some had poured forth their blood on scaffolds. Venal and licentious scribblers, with just sufficient talent to clothe the thoughts of a pandar in the style of a bellman, were now the favorite writers of the Sovereign and of the public. It was a loathsome

herd, which could be compared to nothing so fitly as to the rabble of Comus, grotesque monsters, half bestial, half human, dropping with wine, bloated with gluttony, and reeling in obscene dances.

5 Amidst these that fair Muse was placed, like the chaste lady of the Masque, lofty, spotless, and serene, to be chattered at, and pointed at, and grinned at, by the whole rout of Satyrs and Goblins. If ever despondency and asperity could

10 be excused in any man, they might have been excused in Milton. But the strength of his mind overcame every calamity. Neither blindness, nor gout, nor age, nor penury, nor domestic afflictions, nor political disappointments, nor abuse,

15 nor proscription, nor neglect, had power to disturb his sedate and majestic patience. His spirits do not seem to have been high, but they were singularly equable. His temper was serious, perhaps stern; but it was a temper which no sufferings

20 could render sullen or fretful. Such as it was when, on the eve of great events, he returned from his travels in the prime of health and manly beauty, loaded with literary distinctions, and glowing with patriotic hopes, such it continued to be

25 when, after having experienced every calamity which is incident to our nature, old, poor, sightless, and disgraced, he retired to his hovel to die.

Hence it was that, though he wrote the Paradise Lost at a time of life when images of beauty

30 and tenderness are in general beginning to fade,



even from those minds in which they have not been effaced by anxiety and disappointment, he adorned it with all that is most lovely and delightful in the physical and in the moral world. Neither Theocritus nor Ariosto had a finer or a more healthful sense of the pleasantness of external objects, or loved better to luxuriate amidst sunbeams and flowers, the songs of nightingales, the juice of summer fruits, and the coolness of shady fountains. His conception of love unites all the voluptuousness of the Oriental harem, and all the gallantry of the chivalric tournament, with all the pure and quiet affection of an English fireside. His poetry reminds us of the miracles of Alpine scenery. Nooks and dells, beautiful as fairyland, are embosomed in its most rugged and gigantic elevations. The roses and myrtles bloom unchilled on the verge of the avalanche.

Traces, indeed, of the peculiar character of Milton may be found in all his works; but it is most strongly displayed in the Sonnets. Those remarkable poems have been undervalued by critics who have not understood their nature. They have no epigrammatic point. There is none of the ingenuity of Filicaja in the thought, none of the hard and brilliant enamel of Petrarch in the style. They are simple but majestic records of the feelings of the poet; as little tricked out for the public eye as his diary would have been. A victory, an expected attack upon the city, a momentary fit



of depression or exultation, a jest thrown out against one of his books, a dream which for a short time restored to him that beautiful face over which the grave had closed forever, led him to musings which, without effort, shaped themselves into verse. The unity of sentiment and severity of style which characterize these little pieces remind us of the Greek Anthology, or perhaps still more of the Collects of the English Liturgy. The noble poem on the Massacres of Piedmont is strictly a collect in verse.

The Sonnets are more or less striking, according as the occasions which gave birth to them are more or less interesting. But they are, almost without exception, dignified by a sobriety and greatness of mind to which we know not where to look for a parallel. It would, indeed, be scarcely safe to draw any decided inferences as to the character of a writer from passages directly egotistical. But the qualities which we have ascribed to Milton, though perhaps most strongly marked in those parts of his works which treat of his personal feelings, are distinguishable in every page, and impart to all his writings, prose and poetry, English, Latin, and Italian, a strong family likeness.

His public conduct was such as was to be expected from a man of a spirit so high and of an intellect so powerful. He lived at one of the most memorable eras in the history of mankind; at the very crisis of the great conflict between Oromasdes

and Arimanes, liberty and despotism, reason and prejudice. That great battle was fought for no single generation, for no single land. The destinies of the human race were staked on the same cast with the freedom of the English people. Then were first, proclaimed those mighty principles which have since worked their way into the depths of the American forests, which have roused Greece from the slavery and degradation of two thousand years, and which, from one end of Europe to the other, have kindled an unquenchable fire in the hearts of the oppressed, and loosed the knees of the oppressors with an unwonted fear.

Of those principles, then struggling for their infant existence, Milton was the most devoted and eloquent literary champion. We need not say how much we admire his public conduct. But we cannot disguise from ourselves that a large portion of his countrymen still think it unjustifiable. The civil war, indeed, has been more discussed, and is less understood, than any event in English history. The friends of liberty labored under the disadvantage of which the lion in the fable complained so bitterly. Though they were the conquerors, their enemies were the painters. As a body, the Roundheads had done their utmost to decry and ruin literature; and literature was even with them, as, in the long run, it always is with its enemies. The best book on their side of the question is the charming narrative of Mrs.

Hutchinson. May's History of the Parliament is good; but it breaks off at the most interesting crisis of the struggle. The performance of Ludlow is foolish and violent; and most of the later  
5 writers who have espoused the same cause, Oldmixon, for instance, and Catherine Macaulay, have, to say the least, been more distinguished by zeal than either by candor or by skill. On the other side are the most authoritative and the most  
10 popular historical works in our language, that of Clarendon, and that of Hume. The former is not only ably written and full of valuable information, but has also an air of dignity and sincerity which makes even the prejudices and errors with which  
15 it abounds respectable. Hume, from whose fascinating narrative the great mass of the reading public are still contented to take their opinions, hated religion so much that he hated liberty for having been allied with religion, and has pleaded  
20 the cause of tyranny with the dexterity of an advocate, while affecting the impartiality of a judge.

The public conduct of Milton must be approved or condemned, according as the resistance of the people to Charles the First shall appear to be justifi-  
25 fiable or criminal. We shall therefore make no apology for dedicating a few pages to the discussion of that interesting and most important question. We shall not argue it on general grounds. We shall not recur to those primary prin-  
30 ciples from which the claim of any government to

the obedience of its subjects is to be deduced. We are entitled to that vantage-ground; but we will relinquish it. We are, on this point, so confident of superiority, that we are not unwilling to imitate the ostentatious generosity of those ancient knights, who vowed to joust without helmet or shield against all enemies, and to give their antagonists the advantage of sun and wind. We will take the naked constitutional question. We confidently affirm, that every reason which can be urged in favor of the Revolution of 1688 may be urged with at least equal force in favor of what is called the Great Rebellion.

In one respect only, we think, can the warmest admirers of Charles venture to say that he was a better sovereign than his son. He was not, in name and profession, a Papist; we say in name and profession, because both Charles himself and his creature Laud, while they abjured the innocent badges of Popery, retained all its worst vices, a complete subjection of reason to authority, a weak preference of form to substance, a childish passion for mummeries, an idolatrous veneration for the priestly character, and, above all, a merciless intolerance. This, however, we waive. We concede that Charles was a good Protestant; but we say that his Protestantism does not make the slightest distinction between his case and that of James.

The principles of the Revolution have often been

grossly misrepresented, and never more than in the course of the present year. There is a certain class of men who, while they profess to hold in reverence the great names and great actions of  
5 former times, never look at them for any other purpose than in order to find in them some excuse for existing abuses. In every venerable precedent they pass by what is essential, and take only what is accidental: they keep out of sight what is  
10 beneficial, and hold up to public imitation all that is defective. If, in any part of any great example, there be anything unsound, these flesh-flies detect it with an unerring instinct, and dart upon it with a ravenous delight. If some good end has been  
15 attained in spite of them, they feel, with their prototype, that

“ Their labor must be to pervert that end,  
And out of good still to find means of evil.”

To the blessings which England has derived  
20 from the Revolution these people are utterly insensible. The expulsion of a tyrant, the solemn recognition of popular rights, liberty, security, toleration, all go for nothing with them. One sect there was, which, from unfortunate temporary  
25 causes, it was thought necessary to keep under close restraint. One part of the empire there was so unhappily circumstanced, that at that time its misery was necessary to our happiness, and its slavery to our freedom. These are the parts of the

Revolution which the politicians of whom we speak love to contemplate, and which seem to them not indeed to vindicate, but in some degree to palliate, the good which it has produced. Talk to them of Naples, of Spain, or of South America. 5 They stand forth zealots for the doctrine of Divine Right, which has now come back to us, like a thief from transportation, under the *alias* of Legitimacy. But mention the miseries of Ireland. Then William is a hero. Then Somers and 10 Shrewsbury are great men. Then the Revolution is a glorious era. The very same persons who, in this country, never omit an opportunity of reviving every wretched Jacobite slander respecting the Whigs of that period, have no sooner 15 crossed St. George's Channel, than they begin to fill their bumpers to the glorious and immortal memory. They may truly boast that they look not at men, but at measures. So that evil be done, they care not who does it; the arbitrary Charles or 20 the liberal William, Ferdinand the Catholic or Frederic the Protestant. On such occasions their deadliest opponents may reckon upon their candid construction. The bold assertions of these people 25 have of late impressed a large portion of the public with an opinion that James the Second was expelled simply because he was a Catholic, and that the Revolution was essentially a Protestant Revolution.

But this certainly was not the case; nor can any person who has acquired more knowledge of the 30

history of those times than is to be found in Goldsmith's Abridgment; believe that, if James had held his own religious opinions without wishing to make proselytes, or if, wishing even to make  
5 proselytes, he had contented himself with exerting only his constitutional influence for that purpose, the Prince of Orange would ever have been invited over. Our ancestors, we suppose, knew their own meaning; and, if we may believe  
10 them, their hostility was primarily not to popery, but to tyranny. They did not drive out a tyrant because he was a Catholic; but they excluded Catholics from the crown, because they thought them likely to be tyrants. The ground on which  
15 they, in their famous resolution, declared the throne vacant, was this, "that James had broken the fundamental laws of the kingdom." Every man, therefore, who approves of the Revolution of 1688 must hold that the breach of fundamental  
20 laws on the part of the sovereign justifies resistance. The question, then, is this: Had Charles the First broken the fundamental laws of England?

No person can answer in the negative unless he  
25 refuses credit, not merely to all the accusations brought against Charles by his opponents, but to the narratives of the warmest Royalists, and to the confessions of the King himself. If there be any truth in any historian of any party who has related  
30 the events of that reign, the conduct of Charles,

from his accession to the meeting of the Long Parliament, had been a continued course of oppression and treachery. Let those who applaud the Revolution and condemn the Rebellion mention one act of James the Second to which a parallel is not to be found in the history of his father. Let them lay their fingers on a single article in the Declaration of Right, presented by the two Houses to William and Mary, which Charles is not acknowledged to have violated. He had, according to the testimony of his own friends, usurped the functions of the legislature, raised taxes without the consent of parliament, and quartered troops on the people in the most illegal and vexatious manner. Not a single session of parliament had passed without some unconstitutional attack on the freedom of debate. The right of petition was grossly violated; arbitrary judgments, exorbitant fines, and unwarranted imprisonments, were grievances of daily occurrence. If these things do not justify resistance, the Revolution was treason; if they do, the Great Rebellion was laudable.

But, it is said, why not adopt milder measures? Why, after the King had consented to so many reforms and renounced so many oppressive prerogatives, did the parliament continue to rise in their demands at the risk of provoking a civil war? The ship-money had been given up. The Star Chamber had been abolished. Provision had been made for the frequent convocation and secure



deliberation of parliaments. Why not pursue an end confessedly good by peaceable and regular means? We recur again to the analogy of the Revolution. Why was James driven from the throne? Why was he not retained upon conditions? He too had offered to call a free parliament, and to submit to its decision all the matters in dispute. Yet we are in the habit of praising our forefathers, who preferred a revolution, a disputed succession, a dynasty of strangers, twenty years of foreign and intestine war, a standing army, and a national debt, to the rule, however restricted, of a tried and proved tyrant. The Long Parliament acted on the same principle, and is entitled to the same praise. They could not trust the King. He had, no doubt, passed salutary laws; but what assurance was there that he would not break them? He had renounced oppressive prerogatives; but where was the security that he would not resume them? The nation had to deal with a man whom no tie could bind, a man who made and broke promises with equal facility, a man whose honor had been a hundred times pawned, and never redeemed.

Here, indeed, the Long Parliament stands on still stronger ground than the Convention of 1688. No action of James can be compared to the conduct of Charles with respect to the Petition of Right. The Lords and Commons present him with a bill in which the constitutional limits of

his power are marked out. He hesitates; he evades; at last he bargains to give his assent for five subsidies. The bill receives his solemn assent: the subsidies are voted; but no sooner is the tyrant relieved than he returns at once to all the arbitrary measures which he had bound himself to abandon, and violates all the clauses of the very Act which he had been paid to pass. 5

For more than ten years the people had seen the rights which were theirs by a double claim, by immemorial inheritance, and by recent purchase, infringed by the perfidious King who had recognized them. At length circumstances compelled Charles to summon another parliament: another chance was given to our fathers: were they to throw it away as they had thrown away the former? Were they again to be cozened by *le Roi le veut*? Were they again to advance their money on pledges which had been forfeited over and over again? Were they to lay a second Petition of Right at the foot of the throne, to grant another lavish aid in exchange for another unmeaning ceremony, and then to take their departure, till, after ten years more of fraud and oppression, their prince should again require a supply, and again repay it with a perjury? They were compelled to choose whether they would trust a tyrant or conquer him. We think that they chose wisely and nobly. 10 15 20 25

The advocates of Charles, like the advocates of 30

other malefactors against whom overwhelming evidence is produced, generally decline all controversy about the facts, and content themselves with calling testimony to character. He had so many  
5 private virtues! And had James the Second no private virtues? Was Oliver Cromwell, his bitterest enemies themselves being judges, destitute of private virtues? And what, after all, are the virtues ascribed to Charles? A religious zeal, not  
10 more sincere than that of his son, and fully as weak and narrow-minded, and a few of the ordinary household decencies which half the tombstones in England claim for those who lie beneath them. A good father! A good husband! Ample apologies indeed for fifteen years of persecution, tyranny,  
15 and falsehood!

We charge him with having broken his coronation oath; and we are told that he kept his marriage vow! We accuse him of having given up his  
20 people to the merciless inflictions of the most hot-headed and hard-hearted of prelates; and the defence is that he took his little son on his knee, and kissed him! We censure him for having violated the articles of the Petition of Right, after  
25 having, for good and valuable consideration, promised to observe them; and we are informed that he was accustomed to hear prayers at six o'clock in the morning! It is to such considerations as these, together with his Vandyke dress,  
30 his handsome face, and his peaked beard, that he

owes, we verily believe, most of his popularity with the present generation.

For ourselves, we own that we do not understand the common phrase, a good man, but a bad king. We can as easily conceive a good man and an unnatural father, or a good man and a treacherous friend. We cannot, in estimating the character of an individual, leave out of our consideration his conduct in the most important of all human relations; and if in that relation we find him to have been selfish, cruel, and deceitful, we shall take the liberty to call him a bad man, in spite of all his temperance at table, and all his regularity at chapel.

We cannot refrain from adding a few words respecting a topic on which the defenders of Charles are fond of dwelling. If, they say, he governed his people ill, he at least governed them after the example of his predecessors. If he violated their privileges, it was because those privileges had not been accurately defined. No act of oppression has ever been imputed to him which has not a parallel in the annals of the Tudors. This point Hume has labored, with an art which is as discreditable in a historical work as it would be admirable in a forensic address. The answer is short, clear, and decisive. Charles had assented to the Petition of Right. He had renounced the oppressive powers said to have been exercised by his predecessors, and he had renounced

them for money. He was not entitled to set up his antiquated claims against his own recent release.

These arguments are so obvious that it may  
5 seem superfluous to dwell upon them. But those  
whô have observed how much the events of that  
time are misrepresented and misunderstood, will  
not blame us for stating the case simply. It is a  
case of which the simplest statement is the  
10 strongest.

The enemies of the Parliament, indeed, rarely  
choose to take issue on the great points of the  
question. They content themselves with exposing  
some of the crimes and follies to which public  
15 commotions necessarily give birth. They bewail  
the unmerited fate of Strafford. They execrate  
the lawless violence of the army. They laugh at  
the Scriptural names of the preachers. Major-  
generals fleecing their districts; soldiers revelling  
20 on the spoils of a ruined peasantry; upstarts,  
enriched by the public plunder, taking possession  
of the hospitable firesides and hereditary trees of  
the old gentry; boys smashing the beautiful win-  
dows of cathedrals; Quakers riding naked through  
25 the market-place; Fifth-monarchy men shouting  
for King Jesus; agitators lecturing from the tops  
of tubs on the fate of Agag;—all these, they tell  
us, were the offspring of the Great Rebellion.

Be it so. We are not careful to answer in this  
30 matter. These charges, were they infinitely more

important, would not alter our opinion of an event which alone has made us to differ from the slaves who crouch beneath despotic sceptres. Many evils, no doubt, were produced by the civil war. They were the price of our liberty. Has the acquisition been worth the sacrifice? It is the nature of the Devil of tyranny to tear and rend the body which he leaves. Are the miseries of continued possession less horrible than the struggles of the tremendous exorcism?

If it were possible that a people brought up under an intolerant and arbitrary system could subvert that system without acts of cruelty and folly, half the objections to despotic power would be removed. We should, in that case, be compelled to acknowledge that it at least produces no pernicious effects on the intellectual and moral character of a nation. We deplore the outrages which accompany revolutions. But the more violent the outrages, the more assured we feel that a revolution was necessary. The violence of those outrages will always be proportioned to the ferocity and ignorance of the people; and the ferocity and ignorance of the people will be proportioned to the oppression and degradation under which they have been accustomed to live. Thus it was in our civil war. The heads of the church and state reaped only that which they had sown. The government had prohibited free discussion; it had done its best to keep the people unacquainted with their

duties and their rights. The retribution was just and natural. If our rulers suffered from popular ignorance, it was because they had themselves taken away the key of knowledge. If they were  
5 assailed with blind fury, it was because they had exacted an equally blind submission.

It is the character of such revolutions that we always see the worst of them at first. Till men have been some time free, they know not how to  
10 use their freedom. The natives of wine countries are generally sober. In climates where wine is a rarity intemperance abounds. A newly liberated people may be compared to a northern army encamped on the Rhine or the Xeres. It is said  
15 that, when soldiers in such a situation first find themselves able to indulge without restraint in such a rare and expensive luxury, nothing is to be seen but intoxication. Soon, however, plenty teaches discretion; and, after wine has been for a  
20 few months their daily fare, they become more temperate than they had ever been in their own country. In the same manner, the final and permanent fruits of liberty are wisdom, moderation, and mercy. Its immediate effects are often atrocious crimes, conflicting errors, scepticism on points  
25 the most clear, dogmatism on points the most mysterious. It is just at this crisis that its enemies love to exhibit it. They pull down the scaffolding from the half-finished edifice; they  
30 point to the flying dust, the falling bricks, the



comfortless rooms, the frightful irregularity of the whole appearance; and then ask in scorn where the promised splendor and comfort is to be found. If such miserable sophisms were to prevail there would never be a good house or a good government 5 in the world.

Ariosto tells a pretty story of a fairy, who, by some mysterious law of her nature, was condemned to appear at certain seasons in the form of a foul and poisonous snake. Those who injured her 10 during the period of her disguise were forever excluded from participation in the blessings which she bestowed. But to those who, in spite of her loathsome aspect, pitied and protected her, she afterwards revealed herself in the beautiful and 15 celestial form which was natural to her, accompanied their steps, granted all their wishes, filled their houses with wealth, made them happy in love and victorious in war. Such a spirit is Liberty. At times she takes the form of a hateful 20 reptile. She grovels, she hisses, she stings. But woe to those who in disgust shall venture to crush her! And happy are those who, having dared to receive her in her degraded and frightful shape, shall at length be rewarded by her in the time of 25 her beauty and her glory!

There is only one cure for the evils which newly acquired freedom produces; and that cure is freedom. When a prisoner first leaves his cell he cannot bear the light of day: he is unable to 30



discriminate colors, or recognize faces. But the remedy is, not to remand him into his dungeon, but to accustom him to the rays of the sun. The blaze of truth and liberty may at first dazzle and bewilder nations which have become half blind in the house of bondage. But let them gaze on, and they will soon be able to bear it. In a few years men learn to reason. The extreme violence of opinions subsides. Hostile theories correct each other. The scattered elements of truth cease to contend, and begin to coalesce. And at length a system of justice and order is educed out of the chaos.

Many politicians of our time are in the habit of laying it down as a self-evident proposition, that no people ought to be free till they are fit to use their freedom. The maxim is worthy of the fool in the old story, who resolved not to go into the water till he had learned to swim. If men are to wait for liberty till they become wise and good in slavery, they may indeed wait forever.

Therefore it is that we decidedly approve of the conduct of Milton and the other wise and good men who, in spite of much that was ridiculous and hateful in the conduct of their associates, stood firmly by the cause of Public Liberty. We are not aware that the poet has been charged with personal participation in any of the blamable excesses of that time. The favorite topic of his enemies is the line of conduct which he pursued

with regard to the execution of the King. Of that celebrated proceeding we by no means approve. Still we must say, in justice to the many eminent persons who concurred in it, and in justice more particularly to the eminent person 5 who defended it, that nothing can be more absurd than the imputations which, for the last hundred and sixty years, it has been the fashion to cast upon the Regicides. We have, throughout, abstained from appealing to first principles. We 10 will not appeal to them now. We recur again to the parallel case of the Revolution. What essential distinction can be drawn between the execution of the father and the deposition of the son? What constitutional maxim is there which applies 15 to the former and not to the latter? The King can do no wrong. If so, James was as innocent as Charles could have been. The minister only ought to be responsible for the acts of the Sovereign. If so, why not impeach Jeffreys and retain 20 James? The person of a King is sacred. Was the person of James considered sacred at the Boyne? To discharge cannon against an army in which a king is known to be posted is to approach pretty near to regicide. Charles, too, it should 25 always be remembered, was put to death by men who had been exasperated by the hostilities of several years, and who had never been bound to him by any other tie than that which was common to them with all their fellow-citizens. Those who 30

drove James from his throne, who seduced his  
army, who alienated his friends, who first im-  
prisoned him in his palace, and then turned him  
out of it, who broke in upon his very slumbers by  
5 imperious messages, who pursued him with fire  
and sword from one part of the empire to another,  
who hanged, drew, and quartered his adherents,  
and attained his innocent heir, were his nephew  
and his two daughters. When we reflect on all  
10 these things, we are at a loss to conceive how the  
same persons who, on the fifth of November, thank  
God for wonderfully conducting his servant  
William, and for making all opposition fall before  
him until he became our King and Governor, can,  
15 on the thirtieth of January, contrive to be afraid  
that the blood of the Royal Martyr may be visited  
on themselves and their children.

We disapprove, we repeat, of the execution of  
Charles; not because the constitution exempts  
20 the King from responsibility, for we know that all  
such maxims, however excellent, have their excep-  
tions; nor because we feel any peculiar interest in  
his character, for we think that his sentence  
describes him with perfect justice as "a tyrant, a  
35 traitor, a murderer, and a public enemy;" but  
because we are convinced that the measure was  
most injurious to the cause of freedom. He  
whom it removed was a captive and a hostage: his  
neir, to whom the allegiance of every Royalist was  
40 instantly transferred, was at large. The Presby-

terians could never have been perfectly reconciled to the father; they had no such rooted enmity to the son. The great body of the people, also, contemplated that proceeding with feelings which, however unreasonable, no government could safely venture to outrage. 5

But though we think the conduct of the Regicides blamable, that of Milton appears to us in a very different light. The deed was done. It could not be undone. The evil was incurred; and the object was to render it as small as possible. 10 We censure the chiefs of the army for not yielding to the popular opinion; but we cannot censure Milton for wishing to change that opinion. The very feeling which would have restrained us from committing the act, would have led us, after it had been committed, to defend it against the ravings of servility and superstition. For the sake of public liberty we wish that the thing had not been done while the people disapproved of it. But, for the sake of public liberty, we should also have wished the people to approve of it when it was done. 20 If anything more were wanting to the justification of Milton, the book of Salmasius would furnish it. That miserable performance is now with justice considered only as a beacon to word-catchers who wish to become statesmen. The celebrity of the man who refuted it, the "*Æneæ magni dextra*," gives it all its fame with the present generation. 25 In that age the state of things was different. It 30

was not then fully understood how vast an interval separates the mere classical scholar from the political philosopher. Nor can it be doubted that a treatise which, bearing the name of so eminent a  
5 critic, attacked the fundamental principles of all free governments, must, if suffered to remain unanswered, have produced a most pernicious effect on the public mind.

We wish to add a few words relative to another  
10 subject, on which the enemies of Milton delight to dwell,—his conduct during the administration of the Protector. That an enthusiastic votary of liberty should accept office under a military usurper seems, no doubt, at first sight, extraordinary.  
15 But all the circumstances in which the country was then placed were extraordinary. The ambition of Oliver was of no vulgar kind. He never seems to have coveted despotic power. He at first fought sincerely and manfully for the Parliament,  
20 and never deserted it till it had deserted its duty. If he dissolved it by force, it was not till he found that the few members who remained after so many deaths, secessions, and expulsions, were desirous to appropriate to themselves a power which they held  
25 only in trust, and to inflict upon England the curse of a Venetian oligarchy. But even when thus placed by violence at the head of affairs, he did not assume unlimited power. He gave the country a constitution far more perfect than any  
30 which had at that time been known in the world.

He reformed the representative system in a manner which has extorted praise even from Lord Clarendon. For himself he demanded indeed the first place in the commonwealth; but with powers scarcely so great as those of a Dutch stadtholder or an American president. He gave the Parliament a voice in the appointment of ministers, and left to it the whole legislative authority, not even reserving to himself a veto on its enactments; and he did not require that the chief magistracy should be hereditary in his family. Thus far, we think, if the circumstances of the time and the opportunities which he had of aggrandizing himself be fairly considered, he will not lose by comparison with Washington or Bolivar. Had his moderation been met by corresponding moderation, there is no reason to think that he would have overstepped the line which he had traced for himself. But when he found that his parliaments questioned the authority under which they met, and that he was in danger of being deprived of the restricted power which was absolutely necessary to his personal safety, then, it must be acknowledged, he adopted a more arbitrary policy.

Yet, though we believe that the intentions of Cromwell were at first honest, though we believe that he was driven from the noble course which he had marked out for himself by the almost irresistible force of circumstances, though we admire, in common with all men of all parties, the ability

and energy of his splendid administration, we are not pleading for arbitrary and lawless power, even in his hands. We know that a good constitution is infinitely better than 'the best despot. But we  
5 suspect, that at the time of which we speak, the violence of religious and political enmities rendered a stable and happy settlement next to impossible. The choice lay, not between Cromwell and liberty, but between Cromwell and the Stuarts. That  
10 Milton chose well, no man can doubt who fairly compares the events of the protectorate with those of the thirty years which succeeded it, the darkest and most disgraceful in the English annals. Cromwell was evidently laying, though in an  
15 irregular manner, the foundations of an admirable system. Never before had religious liberty and the freedom of discussion been enjoyed in a greater degree. Never had the national honor been better upheld abroad, or the seat of justice better filled at  
20 home. And it was rarely that any opposition which stopped short of open rebellion provoked the resentment of the liberal and magnanimous usurper. The institutions which he had established, as set down in the Instrument of Govern-  
25 ment and the Humble Petition and Advice, were excellent. His practice, it is true, too often departed from the theory of these institutions. But had he lived a few years longer, it is probable that his institutions would have survived him, and  
30 that his arbitrary practice would have died with



him. His power had not been consecrated by ancient prejudices. It was upheld only by his great personal qualities. Little, therefore, was to be dreaded from a second protector, unless he were also a second Oliver Cromwell. The events which followed his decease are the most complete vindication of those who exerted themselves to uphold his authority. His death dissolved the whole frame of society. The army rose against the Parliament, the different corps of the army against each other. Sect raved against sect. Party plotted against party. The Presbyterians, in their eagerness to be revenged on the Independents, sacrificed their own liberty, and deserted all their old principles. Without casting one glance on the past, or requiring one stipulation for the future, they threw down their freedom at the feet of the most frivolous and heartless of tyrants.

Then came those days, never to be recalled without a blush, the days of servitude without loyalty, and sensuality without love; of dwarfish talents and gigantic vices; the paradise of cold hearts and narrow minds; the golden age of the coward, the bigot, and the slave. The King cringed to his rival that he might trample on his people, sank into a viceroy of France, and pocketed with complacent infamy her degrading insults and her more degrading gold. The caresses of harlots, and the jests of buffoons, regulated the policy of the state. The government had just ability



enough to deceive, and just religion enough to persecute. The principles of liberty were the scoff of every grinning courtier, and the Anathema Maranatha of every fawning dean. In every high  
5 place, worship was paid to Charles and James, Belial and Moloch; and England propitiated those obscene and cruel idols with the blood of her best and bravest children. Crime succeeded to crime, and disgrace to disgrace, till the race, accursed of  
10 God and man, was a second time driven forth, to wander on the face of the earth, and to be a by-word and a shaking of the head to the nations.

Most of the remarks which we have hitherto made on the public character of Milton, apply to  
15 him only as one of a large body. We shall proceed to notice some of the peculiarities which distinguished him from his contemporaries. And for that purpose it is necessary to take a short survey of the parties into which the political world was at  
20 that time divided. We must premise that our observations are intended to apply only to those who adhered, from a sincere preference, to one or to the other side. In days of public commotion every faction, like an Oriental army, is attended  
25 by a crowd of camp-followers, a useless and heartless rabble, who prowl round its line of march in the hope of picking up something under its protection, but desert it in the day of battle, and often join to exterminate it after a defeat. Eng-  
30 land, at the time of which we are treating,

abounded with fickle and selfish politicians, who transferred their support to every government as it rose; who kissed the hand of the King in 1640, and spat in his face in 1649; who shouted with equal glee when Cromwell was inaugurated in Westminster Hall, and when he was dug up to be hanged at Tyburn; who dined on calves' heads, or stuck up oak-branches, as circumstances altered, without the slightest shame or repugnance. These we leave out of the account. We take our estimate of parties from those who really deserve to be called partisans.

We would speak first of the Puritans, the most remarkable body of men, perhaps, which the world has ever produced. The odious and ridiculous parts of their character lie on the surface. He that runs may read them; nor have there been wanting attentive and malicious observers to point them out. For many years after the Restoration, they were the theme of unmeasured invective and derision. They were exposed to the utmost licentiousness of the press and of the stage, at the time when the press and the stage were most licentious. They were not men of letters; they were, as a body, unpopular; they could not defend themselves; and the public would not take them under its protection. They were therefore abandoned, without reserve, to the tender mercies of the satirists and dramatists. The ostentatious simplicity of their dress, their sour aspect, their

nasal twang, their stiff posture, their long graces, their Hebrew names, the Scriptural phrases which they introduced on every occasion, their contempt of human learning, their detestation of polite  
 5 amusements, were indeed fair game for the laughers. But it is not from the laughers alone that the philosophy of history is to be learned. And he who approaches this subject should carefully guard against the influence of that potent  
 10 ridicule which has already misled so many excellent writers.

“Ecco il fonte del riso, ed ecco il rio  
 Che mortali perigli in se contiene:  
 Hor qui tener a fren nostro desio,  
 15 Ed esser cauti molto a noi conviene.”

Those who roused the people to resistance; who directed their measures through a long series of eventful years; who formed, out of the most unpromising materials, the finest army that Europe  
 20 had ever seen; who trampled down King, Church, and Aristocracy; who, in the short intervals of domestic sedition and rebellion, made the name of England terrible to every nation on the face of the earth, were no vulgar fanatics. Most of their  
 25 absurdities were mere external badges, like the signs of freemasonry, or the dresses of friars. We regret that these badges were not more attractive. We regret that a body to whose courage and talents mankind has owed inestimable obligations  
 30 had not the lofty elegance which distinguished some

of the adherents of Charles the First, or the easy good-breeding for which the Court of Charles the Second was celebrated. But, if we must make our choice, we shall, like Bassanio in the play, turn from the specious caskets which contain only the Death's head and the Fool's head, and fix on the plain leaden chest which conceals the treasure. 5

The Puritans were men whose minds had derived a peculiar character from the daily contemplation of superior beings and eternal interests. 10 Not content with acknowledging, in general terms, an overruling Providence, they habitually ascribed every event to the will of the Great Being, for whose power nothing was too vast, for whose inspection nothing was too minute. To know 15 him, to serve him, to enjoy him, was with them the great end of existence. They rejected with contempt the ceremonious homage which other sects substituted for the pure worship of the soul. Instead of catching occasional glimpses of the 20 Deity through an obscuring veil, they aspired to gaze full on his intolerable brightness, and to commune with him face to face. Hence originated their contempt for terrestrial distinctions. The difference between the greatest and the meanest of 25 mankind seemed to vanish, when compared with the boundless interval which separated the whole race from him on whom their own eyes were constantly fixed. They recognized no title to superiority but his favor; and, confident of that favor, 30

they despised all the accomplishments and all the dignities of the world. If they were unacquainted with the works of philosophers and poets, they were deeply read in the oracles of God. If their  
5 names were not found in the registers of heralds, they were recorded in the Book of Life. If their steps were not accompanied by a splendid train of menials, legions of ministering angels had charge over them. Their palaces were houses not made  
10 with hands; their diadems crowns of glory which should never fade away. On the rich and the eloquent, on nobles and priests, they looked down with contempt; for they esteemed themselves rich in a more precious treasure, and eloquent in a  
15 more sublime language, nobles by the right of an earlier creation, and priests by the imposition of a mightier hand. The very meanest of them was a being to whose fate a mysterious and terrible importance belonged, on whose slightest action  
20 the spirits of light and darkness looked with anxious interest, who had been destined, before heaven and earth were created, to enjoy a felicity which should continue when heaven and earth should have passed away. Events which short-  
25 sighted politicians ascribed to earthly causes, had been ordained on his account. For his sake empires had risen, and flourished and decayed. For his sake the Almighty had proclaimed his will by the pen of the Evangelist and the harp of the  
30 prophet. He had been wrested by no common

deliverer from the grasp of no common foe. He had been ransomed by the sweat of no vulgar agony, by the blood of no earthly sacrifice. It was for him that the sun had been darkened, that the rocks had been rent, that the dead had risen, that all nature had shuddered at the sufferings of her expiring God. 5

Thus the Puritan was made up of two different men, the one all self-abasement, penitence, gratitude, passion; the other proud, calm, inflexible, sagacious. He prostrated himself in the dust before his Maker; but he set his foot on the neck of his king. In his devotional retirement, he prayed with convulsions, and groans, and tears. He was half maddened by glorious or terrible illusions. He heard the lyres of angels or the tempting whispers of fiends. He caught a gleam of the Beatific Vision, or woke screaming from dreams of everlasting fire. Like Vane, he thought himself intrusted with the sceptre of the millennial year. Like Fleetwood, he cried in the bitterness of his soul that God had hid his face from him. But when he took his seat in the council, or girt on his sword for war, these tempestuous workings of the soul had left no perceptible trace behind them. People who saw nothing of the godly but their uncouth visages, and heard nothing from them but their groans and their whining hymns, might laugh at them. But those had little reason to laugh who encountered them in the hall of debate 30

or in the field of battle. These fanatics brought to civil and military affairs a coolness of judgment and an immutability of purpose which some writers have thought inconsistent with their religious  
5 zeal, but which were in fact the necessary effects of it. The intensity of their feelings on one subject made them tranquil on every other. One overpowering sentiment had subjected to itself pity and hatred, ambition and fear. Death had lost its  
10 terrors and pleasure its charms. They had their smiles and their tears, their raptures and their sorrows, but not for the things of this world. Enthusiasm had made them Stoics, had cleared their minds from every vulgar passion and prejudice,  
15 and raised them above the influence of danger and of corruption. It sometimes might lead them to pursue unwise ends, but never to choose unwise means. They went through the world, like Sir Artegal's iron man Talus with his flail, crushing  
20 and trampling down oppressors, mingling with human beings, but having neither part nor lot in human infirmities; insensible to fatigue, to pleasure, and to pain; not to be pierced by any weapon, not to be withstood by any barrier.

25 Such we believe to have been the character of the Puritans. We perceive the absurdity of their manners. We dislike the sullen gloom of their domestic habits. We acknowledge that the tone of their minds was often injured by straining after  
30 things too high for mortal reach; and we know

that, in spite of their hatred of Popery, they too often fell into the worst vices of that bad system, intolerance and extravagant austerity; that they had their anchorites and their crusades, their Dunstons and their De Montforts, their Dominics 5 and their Escobars. Yet, when all circumstances are taken into consideration, we do not hesitate to pronounce them a brave, a wise, an honest, and a useful body.

The Puritans espoused the cause of civil liberty 10 mainly because it was the cause of religion. There was another party, by no means numerous, but distinguished by learning and ability, which acted with them on very different principles. We speak of those whom Cromwell was accustomed to call 15 the Heathens, men who were, in the phraseology of that time, doubting Thomases or careless Gallios with regard to religious subjects, but passionate worshippers of freedom. Heated by the study of ancient literature, they set up their 20 country as their idol, and proposed to themselves the heroes of Plutarch as their examples. They seem to have borne some resemblance to the Brissotines of the French Revolution. But it is not very easy to draw the line of distinction between 25 them and their devout associates, whose tone and manner they sometimes found it convenient to affect, and sometimes, it is probable, imperceptibly adopted.

We now come to the Royalists. We shall 30



attempt to speak of them, as we have spoken of their antagonists, with perfect candor. We shall not charge upon a whole party the profligacy and baseness of the horse-boys, gamblers, and bravoës, whom the hope of license and plunder attracted from all the dens of Whitefriars to the standard of Charles, and who disgraced their associates by excesses which, under the stricter discipline of the Parliamentary armies, were never tolerated. We will select a more favorable specimen. Thinking as we do that the cause of the King was the cause of bigotry and tyranny, we yet cannot refrain from looking with complacency on the character of the honest old Cavaliers. We feel a national pride in comparing them with the instruments which the despots of other countries are compelled to employ, with the mutes who throng their antechambers, and the Janissaries who mount guard at their gates. Our royalist countrymen were not heartless, dangling courtiers, bowing at every step, and simpering at every word. They were not mere machines for destruction, dressed up in uniforms, caned into skill, intoxicated into valor, defending without love, destroying without hatred. There was a freedom in their subserviency, a nobleness in their very degradation. The sentiment of individual independence was strong within them. They were indeed misled, but by no base or selfish motive. Compassion and romantic honor, the prejudices of childhood, and the venerable names

of history, threw over them a spell potent as that of Duessa; and, like the Red-Cross Knight, they thought that they were doing battle for an injured beauty, while they defended a false and loathsome sorceress. In truth, they scarcely entered at all into the merits of the political question. It was not for a treacherous king or an intolerant church that they fought, but for the old banner which had waved in so many battles over the heads of their fathers, and for the altars at which they had received the hands of their brides. Though nothing could be more erroneous than their political opinions, they possessed, in a far greater degree than their adversaries, those qualities which are the grace of private life. With many of the vices of the Round Table, they had also many of its virtues,—courtesy, generosity, veracity, tenderness, and respect for women. They had far more both of profound and of polite learning than the Puritans. Their manners were more engaging, their tempers more amiable, their tastes more elegant, and their households more cheerful.

Milton did not strictly belong to any of the classes which we have described. He was not a Puritan. He was not a free-thinker. He was not a Royalist. In his character the noblest qualities of every party were combined in harmonious union. From the Parliament and from the Court, from the conventicle and from the Gothic cloister, from the gloomy and sepulchral circles of the Roundheads,

and from the Christmas revel of the hospitable Cavalier, his nature selected and drew to itself whatever was great and good, while it rejected all the base and pernicious ingredients by which those  
5 finer elements were defiled. Like the Puritans, he lived

“As ever in his great task-master’s eye.”

Like them, he kept his mind continually fixed on an Almighty Judge and an eternal reward. And  
10 hence he acquired their contempt of external circumstances, their fortitude, their tranquillity, their inflexible resolution. But not the coolest sceptic or the most profane scoffer was more perfectly free from the contagion of their frantic  
15 delusions, their savage manners, their ludicrous jargon, their scorn of science, and their aversion to pleasure. Hating tyranny with a perfect hatred, he had nevertheless all the estimable and ornamental qualities which were almost entirely  
20 monopolized by the party of the tyrant. There was none who had a stronger sense of the value of literature, a finer relish for every elegant amusement, or a more chivalrous delicacy of honor and love. Though his opinions were democratic, his  
25 tastes and his associations were such as harmonize best with monarchy and aristocracy. He was under the influence of all the feelings by which the gallant Cavaliers were misled. But of those feelings he was the master and not the slave. Like  
30 the hero of Homer, he enjoyed all the pleasures of

fascination; but he was not fascinated. He listened to the song of the Sirens; yet he glided by without being seduced to their fatal shore. He tasted the cup of Circe; but he bore about him a sure antidote against the effects of its bewitching sweetness. The illusions which captivated his imagination never impaired his reasoning powers. The statesman was proof against the splendor, the solemnity, and the romance which enchanted the poet. Any person who will contrast the sentiments expressed in his treatises on Prelacy with the exquisite lines on ecclesiastical architecture and music in the *Penseroso*, which was published about the same time, will understand our meaning. This is an inconsistency which, more than anything else, raises his character in our estimation, because it shows how many private tastes and feelings he sacrificed, in order to do what he considered his duty to mankind. It is the very struggle of the noble Othello. His heart relents; but his hand is firm. He does naught in hate, but all in honor. He kisses the beautiful deceiver before he destroys her.

That from which the public character of Milton derives its great and peculiar splendor, still remains to be mentioned. If he exerted himself to overthrow a forsworn king and a persecuting hierarchy, he exerted himself in conjunction with others. But the glory of the battle which he fought for the species of freedom which is the most

valuable, and which was then the least understood, the freedom of the human mind, is all his own. Thousands and tens of thousands among his contemporaries raised their voices against ship-money  
5 and the Star Chamber. But there were few indeed who discerned the more fearful evils of moral and intellectual slavery, and the benefits which would result from the liberty of the press and the unfettered exercise of private judgment.  
10 These were the objects which Milton justly conceived to be the most important. He was desirous that the people should think for themselves as well as tax themselves, and should be emancipated from the dominion of prejudice as well as from that of  
15 Charles. He knew that those who, with the best intentions, overlooked these schemes of reform, and contented themselves with pulling down the King and imprisoning the malignants, acted like the heedless brothers in his own poem, who, in  
20 their eagerness to disperse the train of the sorcerer, neglected the means of liberating the captive. They thought only of conquering when they should have thought of disenchanting.

“Oh, ye mistook! Ye should have snatched his wand  
25 And bound him fast. Without the rod reversed,  
And backward mutters of dissevering power,  
We cannot free the lady that sits here  
Bound in strong fetters fixed and motionless.”

To reverse the rod, to spell the charm backward,  
30 to break the ties which bound a stupefied people to

the seat of enchantment, was the noble aim of Milton. To this all his public conduct was directed. For this he joined the Presbyterians; for this he forsook them. He fought their perilous battle; but he turned away with disdain from their insolent triumph. He saw that they, like those whom they had vanquished, were hostile to the liberty of thought. He therefore joined the Independents, and called upon Cromwell to break the secular chain, and to save free conscience from the paw of the Presbyterian wolf. With a view to the same great object, he attacked the licensing system, in that sublime treatise which every statesman should wear as a sign upon his hand and as frontlets between his eyes. His attacks were, in general, directed less against particular abuses than against those deeply seated errors on which almost all abuses are founded, the servile worship of eminent men and the irrational dread of innovation.

That he might shake the foundations of these debasing sentiments more effectually, he always selected for himself the boldest literary services. He never came up in the rear, when the outworks had been carried and the breach entered. He pressed into the forlorn hope. At the beginning of the changes, he wrote with incomparable energy and eloquence against the bishops. But, when his opinion seemed likely to prevail, he passed on to other subjects, and abandoned prelacy to the

crowd of writers who now hastened to insult a falling party. There is no more hazardous enterprise than that of bearing the torch of truth into those dark and infected recesses in which no light has ever shone. But it was the choice and the pleasure of Milton to penetrate the noisome vapors, and to brave the terrible explosion. Those who most disapprove of his opinions must respect the hardihood with which he maintained them. He, in general, left to others the credit of expounding and defending the popular parts of his religious and political creed. He took his own stand upon those which the great body of his countrymen reprobated as criminal, or derided as paradoxical. He stood up for divorce and regicide. He attacked the prevailing systems of education. His radiant and beneficent career resembled that of the god of light and fertility:—

“Nitor in adversum; nec me, qui cætera, vincit  
Impetus, et rapido contrarius evehor orbi.”

It is to be regretted that the prose writings of Milton should, in our time, be so little read. As compositions, they deserve the attention of every man who wishes to become acquainted with the full power of the English language. They abound with passages compared with which the finest declamations of Burke sink into insignificance. They are a perfect field of cloth of gold. The style is stiff with gorgeous embroidery. Not even



in the earlier books of the *Paradise Lost* has the great poet ever risen higher than in those parts of his controversial works in which his feelings, excited by conflict, find a vent in bursts of devotional and lyric rapture. It is, to borrow his own majestic language, "a sevenfold chorus of hallelujahs and harping symphonies." 5

We had intended to look more closely at these performances, to analyze the peculiarities of the diction, to dwell at some length on the sublime wisdom of the *Areopagitica* and the nervous rhetoric of the *Iconoclast*, and to point out some of those magnificent passages which occur in the *Treatise of Reformation*, and the *Animadversions on the Remonstrant*. But the length to which our remarks have already extended renders this impossible. 10 15

We must conclude. And yet we can scarcely tear ourselves away from the subject. The days immediately following the publication of this relic of Milton appear to be peculiarly set apart, and consecrated to his memory. And we shall scarcely be censured if, on this his festival, we be found lingering near his shrine, how worthless soever may be the offering which we bring to it. While this book lies on our table, we seem to be contemporaries of the writer. We are transported a hundred and fifty years back. We can almost fancy that we are visiting him in his small lodging; that we see him sitting at the old organ 20 25 30



beneath the faded green hangings; that we can catch the quick twinkle of his eyes, rolling in vain to find the day; that we are reading in the lines of his noble countenance the proud and mournful  
5 history of his glory and his affliction. We image to ourselves the breathless silence in which we should listen to his slightest word; the passionate veneration with which we should kneel to kiss his hand and weep upon it; the earnestness with  
10 which we should endeavor to console him, if indeed such a spirit could need consolation, for the neglect of an age unworthy of his talents and his virtues; the eagerness with which we should contest with his daughters, or with his Quaker friend  
15 Elwood, the privilege of reading Homer to him, or of taking down the immortal accents which flowed from his lips.

These are perhaps foolish feelings. Yet we cannot be ashamed of them; nor shall we be sorry  
20 if what we have written shall in any degree excite them in other minds. We are not much in the habit of idolizing either the living or the dead. And we think that there is no more certain indication of a weak and ill-regulated intellect  
25 than that propensity which, for want of a better name, we will venture to christen Boswellism. But there are a few characters which have stood the closest scrutiny and the severest tests, which have been tried in the furnace and have proved  
30 pure, which have been weighed in the balance and

have not been found wanting, which have been declared sterling by the general consent of mankind, and which are visibly stamped with the image and superscription of the Most High. These great men we trust that we know how to prize; and of these was Milton. The sight of his books, the sound of his name, are pleasant to us. His thoughts resemble those celestial fruits and flowers which the Virgin Martyr of Massinger sent down from the gardens of Paradise to the earth, and which were distinguished from the productions of other soils, not only by superior bloom and sweetness, but by miraculous efficacy to invigorate and to heal. They are powerful, not only to delight, but to elevate and purify. Nor do we envy the man who can study either the life or the writings of the great poet and patriot, without aspiring to emulate, not indeed the sublime works with which his genius has enriched our literature, but the zeal with which he labored for the public good, the fortitude with which he endured every private calamity, the lofty disdain with which he looked down on temptations and dangers, the deadly hatred which he bore to bigots and tyrants, and the faith which he so sternly kept with his country and with his fame.

# THE LIFE AND WRITINGS OF ADDISON

*The Life of Joseph Addison.* By LUCY AIKIN. 2 vols.,  
8vo. London: 1843.

Some reviewers are of opinion that a lady who dares to publish a book renounces by that act the franchises appertaining to her sex, and can claim no exemption from the utmost rigor of critical  
5 procedure. From that opinion we dissent. We admit, indeed, that in a country which boasts of many female writers, eminently qualified by their talents and acquirements to influence the public  
10 mind, it would be of most pernicious consequence that inaccurate history or unsound philosophy should be suffered to pass uncensured, merely because the offender chanced to be a lady. But we conceive that, on such occasions, a critic would do well to imitate the courteous knight who found  
15 himself compelled by duty to keep the lists against Bradamante. He, we are told, defended successfully the cause of which he was the champion; but before the fight began, exchanged Balisarda for a

less deadly sword, of which he carefully blunted the point and edge.

Nor are the immunities of sex the only immunities which Miss Aikin may rightfully plead. Several of her works, and especially the very 5 pleasing *Memoirs of the Reign of James the First*, have fully entitled her to the privileges enjoyed by good writers. One of those privileges we hold to be this, that such writers, when, either from the unlucky choice of a subject, or from the indolence 10 too often produced by success, they happen to fail, shall not be subjected to the severe discipline which it is sometimes necessary to inflict upon dunces and impostors, but shall merely be reminded by a gentle touch, like that with which 15 the Laputan flapper roused his dreaming lord, that it is high time to wake.

Our readers will probably infer from what we have said that Miss Aikin's book has disappointed us. The truth is, that she is not well acquainted 20 with her subject. No person who is not familiar with the political and literary history of England during the reigns of William the Third, of Anne, and of George the First, can possibly write a good life of Addison. Now, we mean no reproach to 25 Miss Aikin, and many will think that we pay her a compliment, when we say that her studies have taken a different direction. She is better acquainted with Shakespeare and Raleigh, than with Congreve and Prior; and is far more at home among 30

the ruffs and peaked beards of Theobald's than among the Steenkirks and flowing periwigs which surrounded Queen Anne's tea-table at Hampton. She seems to have written about the Elizabethan age, because she had read much about it; she seems, on the other hand, to have read a little about the age of Addison, because she had determined to write about it. The consequence is that she has had to describe men and things without having either a correct or a vivid idea of them, and that she has often fallen into errors of a very serious kind. The reputation which Miss Aikin has justly earned stands so high, and the charm of Addison's letters is so great, that a second edition of this work may probably be required. If so, we hope that every paragraph will be revised, and that every date and fact about which there can be the smallest doubt will be carefully verified.

To Addison himself we are bound by a sentiment as much like affection as any sentiment can be, which is inspired by one who has been sleeping a hundred and twenty years in Westminster Abbey. We trust, however, that this feeling will not betray us into that abject idolatry which we have often had occasion to reprehend in others, and which seldom fails to make both the idolater and the idol ridiculous. A man of genius and virtue is but a man. All his powers cannot be equally developed; nor can we expect from him perfect self-knowledge. We need not, therefore, hesitate to admit

that Addison has left us some compositions which do not rise above mediocrity, some heroic poems hardly equal to Parnell's, some criticism as superficial as Dr. Blair's, and a tragedy not very much better than Dr. Johnson's. It is praise enough to say of a writer that, in a high department of literature, in which many eminent writers have distinguished themselves, he has had no equal; and this may with strict justice be said of Addison. 5

As a man, he may not have deserved the adoration which he received from those who, bewitched by his fascinating society, and indebted for all the comforts of life to his generous and delicate friendship, worshipped him nightly in his favorite temple at Button's. But, after full inquiry and impartial reflection, we have long been convinced that he deserved as much love and esteem as can be justly claimed by any of our infirm and erring race. Some blemishes may undoubtedly be detected in his character; but the more carefully it is examined, the more it will appear, to use the phrase of the old anatomists, sound in the noble parts, free from all taint of perfidy, of cowardice, of cruelty, of ingratitude, of envy. Men may easily be named in whom some particular good disposition has been more conspicuous than in Addison. But the just harmony of qualities, the exact temper between the stern and the humane virtues, the habitual observance of every law, not only of moral rectitude, but of moral grace and dignity, distinguish him 30

from all men who have been tried by equally strong temptations, and about whose conduct we possess equally full information.

His father was the Reverend Lancelot Addison, who, though eclipsed by his more celebrated son, made some figure in the world, and occupies with credit two folio pages in the *Biographia Britannica*. Lancelot was sent up as a poor scholar from Westmoreland to Queen's College, Oxford, in the time of the Commonwealth; made some progress in learning; became, like most of his fellow-students, a violent Royalist; lampooned the heads of the university, and was forced to ask pardon on his bended knees. When he had left college he earned a humble subsistence by reading the liturgy of the fallen church to the families of those sturdy squires whose manor-houses were scattered over the Wild of Sussex. After the Restoration his loyalty was rewarded with the post of chaplain to the garrison of Dunkirk. When Dunkirk was sold to France he lost his employment. But Tangier had been ceded by Portugal to England as part of the marriage portion of the Infanta Catharine; and to Tangier Lancelot Addison was sent. A more miserable situation can hardly be conceived. It was difficult to say whether the unfortunate settlers were more tormented by the heats or by the rains, by the soldiers within the wall or by the Moors without it. One advantage the chaplain had. He enjoyed an excellent opportunity of

studying the history and manners of Jews and Mahometans; and of this opportunity he appears to have made excellent use. On his return to England, after some years of banishment, he published an interesting volume on the Polity and Religion of Barbary, and another on the Hebrew Customs and the State of Rabbinical Learning. He rose to eminence in his profession, and became one of the royal chaplains, a Doctor of Divinity, Archdeacon of Salisbury, and Dean of Lichfield. It is said that he would have been made a bishop after the Revolution if he had not given offence to the government by strenuously opposing, in the Convocation of 1689, the liberal policy of William and Tillotson.

In 1672, not long after Dr. Addison's return from Tangier, his son Joseph was born. Of Joseph's childhood we know little. He learned his rudiments at schools in his father's neighborhood, and was then sent to the Charter House. The anecdotes which are popularly related about his boyish tricks do not harmonize very well with what we know of his riper years. There remains a tradition that he was the ringleader in a barring out, and another tradition that he ran away from school and hid himself in a wood, where he fed on berries and slept in a hollow tree, till after a long search he was discovered and brought home. If these stories be true, it would be curious to know by what moral discipline so mutinous and enter-



prising a lad was transformed into the gentlest and most modest of men.

We have abundant proof that, whatever Joseph's pranks may have been, he pursued his studies vigorously and successfully. At fifteen he was not only fit for the university, but carried thither a classical taste and a stock of learning which would have done honor to a Master of Arts. He was entered at Queen's College, Oxford; but he had not been many months there when some of his Latin verses fell by accident into the hands of Dr. Lancaster, Dean of Magdalene College. The young scholar's diction and versification were already such as veteran professors might envy. Dr. Lancaster was desirous to serve a boy of such promise; nor was an opportunity long wanting. The Revolution had just taken place; and nowhere had it been hailed with more delight than at Magdalene College. That great and opulent corporation had been treated by James and by his chancellor with an insolence and injustice which, even in such a prince and in such a minister, may justly excite amazement, and which had done more than even the prosecution of the bishops to alienate the Church of England from the throne. A president, duly elected, had been violently expelled from his dwelling: a Papist had been set over the society by a royal mandate: the Fellows, who, in conformity with their oaths, had refused to submit to this usurper, had been driven forth

from their quiet cloisters and gardens, to die of want or to live on charity. But the day of redress and retribution speedily came. The intruders were ejected: the venerable House was again inhabited by its old inmates: learning flourished under the rule of the wise and virtuous Hough; and with learning was united a mild and liberal spirit too often wanting in the princely colleges of Oxford. In consequence of the troubles through which the society had passed, there had been no valid election of new members during the year 1688. In 1689, therefore, there was twice the ordinary number of vacancies; and thus Dr. Lancaster found it easy to procure for his young friend admittance to the advantages of a foundation then generally esteemed the wealthiest in Europe.

At Magdalene Addison resided during ten years. He was at first one of those scholars who are called Demies, but was subsequently elected a fellow. His college is still proud of his name; his portrait still hangs in the hall; and strangers are still told that his favorite walk was under the elms which fringe the meadow on the banks of the Cherwell. It is said, and is highly probable, that he was distinguished among his fellow-students by the delicacy of his feelings, by the shyness of his manners, and by the assiduity with which he often prolonged his studies far into the night. It is certain that his reputation for ability and learning stood high. Many years later the ancient doctors of Magdalene

continued to talk in their common room of his boyish compositions, and expressed their sorrow that no copy of exercises so remarkable had been preserved. It is proper, however, to remark that  
5 Miss Aikin has committed the error, very pardonable in a lady, of overrating Addison's classical attainments. In one department of learning, indeed, his proficiency was such as it is hardly possible to overrate. His knowledge of the Latin  
10 poets, from Lucretius and Catullus down to Claudian and Prudentius, was singularly exact and profound. He understood them thoroughly, entered into their spirit, and had the finest and most discriminating perception of all their peculiarities  
15 of style and melody; nay, he copied their manner with admirable skill, and surpassed, we think, all their British imitators who had preceded him, Buchanan and Milton alone excepted. This is high praise; and beyond this we cannot with justice go.  
20 It is clear that Addison's serious attention during his residence at the university was almost entirely concentrated on Latin poetry, and that, if he did not wholly neglect other provinces of ancient literature, he vouchsafed to them only a cursory  
25 glance. He does not appear to have attained more than an ordinary acquaintance with the political and moral writers of Rome; nor was his own Latin prose by any means equal to his Latin verse. His knowledge of Greek, though doubtless such as  
30 was in his time thought respectable at Oxford, was

evidently less than that which many lads now carry away every year from Eton and Rugby. A minute examination of his works, if we had time to make such an examination, would fully bear out these remarks. We will briefly advert to a few of the facts on which our judgment is grounded. 5

Great praise is due to the Notes which Addison appended to his version of the second and third books of the *Metamorphoses*. Yet those notes, while they show him to have been, in his own domain, an accomplished scholar, show also how confined that domain was. They are rich in apposite references to Virgil, Statius, and Claudian; but they contain not a single illustration drawn from the Greek poets. Now, if in the whole compass of Latin literature there be a passage which stands in need of illustration drawn from the Greek poets, it is the story of Pentheus in the third book of the *Metamorphoses*. Ovid was indebted for that story to Euripides and Theocritus, both of whom he has sometimes followed minutely. But neither to Euripides nor to Theocritus does Addison make the faintest allusion; and we, therefore, believe that we do not wrong him by supposing that he had little or no knowledge of their works. 10 15 20 25

His travels in Italy, again, abound with classical quotations, happily introduced; but scarcely one of those quotations is in prose. He draws more illustrations from Ausonius and Manilius than from 30

Cicero. Even his notions of the political and military affairs of the Romans seem to be derived from poets and poetasters. Spots made memorable by events which have changed the destinies of the world, and which have been worthily recorded by great historians, bring to his mind only scraps of some ancient versifier. In the gorge of the Apennines he naturally remembers the hardships which Hannibal's army endured, and proceeds to cite, not the authentic narrative of Polybius, not the picturesque narrative of Livy, but the languid hexameters of Silius Italicus. On the banks of the Rubicon he never thinks of Plutarch's lively description, or of the stern conciseness of the Commentaries, or of those letters to Atticus which so forcibly express the alternations of hope and fear in a sensitive mind at a great crisis. His only authority for the events of the civil war is Lucan.

All the best ancient works of art at Rome and Florence are Greek. Addison saw them, however, without recalling one single verse of Pindar, of Callimachus, or of the Attic dramatists; but they brought to his recollection innumerable passages of Horace, Juvenal, Statius, and Ovid.

The same may be said of the Treatise on Medals. In that pleasing work we find about three hundred passages extracted with great judgment from the Roman poets; but we do not recollect a single passage taken from any Roman orator or historian; and we are confident that not a line

is quoted from any Greek writer. No person, who had derived all his information on the subject of medals from Addison, would suspect that the Greek coins were in historical interest equal, and in beauty of execution far superior, to those of Rome.

If it were necessary to find any further proof that Addison's classical knowledge was confined within narrow limits, that proof would be furnished by his Essay on the Evidences of Christianity. The Roman poets throw little or no light on the literary and historical questions which he is under the necessity of examining in that essay. He is, therefore, left completely in the dark; and it is melancholy to see how helplessly he gropes his way from blunder to blunder. He assigns, as grounds for his religious belief, stories as absurd as that of the Cock-Lane ghost, and forgeries as rank as Ireland's Vortigern; puts faith in the lie about the Thundering Legion; is convinced that Tiberius moved the senate to admit Jesus among the gods; and pronounces the letter of Agbarus, King of Edessa, to be a record of great authority. Nor were these errors the effects of superstition; for to superstition Addison was by no means prone. The truth is, that he was writing about what he did not understand.

Miss Aikin has discovered a letter from which it appears that, while Addison resided at Oxford, he was one of several writers whom the booksellers

engaged to make an English version of Herodotus; and she infers that he must have been a good Greek scholar. We can allow very little weight to this argument, when we consider that his fellow-laborers were to have been Boyle and Blackmore. Boyle is remembered chiefly as the nominal author of the worst book on Greek history and philology that ever was printed; and this book, bad as it is, Boyle was unable to produce without help. Of Blackmore's attainments in the ancient tongues, it may be sufficient to say that, in his prose, he has confounded an aphorism with an apophthegm, and that when, in his verse, he treats of classical subjects, his habit is to regale his readers with four false quantities to a page.

It is probable that the classical acquirements of Addison were of as much service to him as if they had been more extensive. The world generally gives its admiration, not to the man who does what nobody else even attempts to do, but to the man who does best what multitudes do well. Bentley was so immeasurably superior to all the other scholars of his time that few among them could discover his superiority. But the accomplishment in which Addison excelled his contemporaries was then, as it is now, highly valued and assiduously cultivated at all English seats of learning. Everybody who had been at a public school had written Latin verses; many had written such verses with tolerable success, and were quite able



to appreciate, though by no means able to rival the skill with which Addison imitated Virgil. His lines on the Barometer and the Bowling Green were applauded by hundreds, to whom the Dissertation on the Epistles of Phalaris was as unintel- 5  
ligible as the hieroglyphics on an obelisk.

Purity of style, and an easy flow of numbers, are common to all Addison's Latin poems. Our favorite piece is the Battle of the Cranes and Pygmies; for in that piece we discern a gleam of 10  
the fancy and humor which many years later enlivened thousands of breakfast-tables. Swift boasted that he was never known to steal a hint; and he certainly owed as little to his predecessors as any modern writer. Yet we cannot help sus- 15  
pecting that he borrowed, perhaps unconsciously, one of the happiest touches in his Voyage of Lilliput from Addison's verses. Let our readers judge.

"The Emperor," says Gulliver, "is taller by about the breadth of my nail than any of his 20  
court, which alone is enough to strike an awe into the beholders."

About thirty years before Gulliver's Travels appeared, Addison wrote these lines:—

"Jamque acies inter medias sese arduus infert 25  
Pygmeadum ductor, qui, majestate verendus,  
Incessuque gravis, reliquos supereminet omnes  
Mole gigantea, mediamque exurgit in ulnam."

The Latin poems of Addison were greatly and justly admired both at Oxford and Cambridge, 30



before his name had ever been heard by the wits who thronged the coffee-houses round Drury-Lane Theatre. In his twenty-second year he ventured to appear before the public as a writer of English  
 5 verse. He addressed some complimentary lines to Dryden, who, after many triumphs and many reverses, had at length reached a secure and lonely eminence among the literary men of that age. Dryden appears to have been much gratified by the  
 10 young scholar's praise; and an interchange of civilities and good offices followed. Addison was probably introduced by Dryden to Congreve, and was certainly presented by Congreve to Charles  
 15 Exchequer, and leader of the Whig party in the House of Commons.

At this time Addison seemed inclined to devote himself to poetry. He published a translation of part of the fourth Georgic, Lines to King  
 20 William, and other performances of equal value; that is to say, of no value at all. But in those days, the public was in the habit of receiving with applause pieces which would now have little chance of obtaining the Newdigate prize or the Seatonian  
 25 prize. And the reason is obvious. The heroic couplet was then the favorite measure. The art of arranging words in that measure, so that the lines may flow smoothly, that the accents may fall correctly, that the rhymes may strike the ear  
 30 strongly, and that there may be a pause at the end

of every distich, is an art as mechanical as that of mending a kettle or shoeing a horse, and may be learned by any human being who has sense enough to learn anything. But, like other mechanical arts, it was gradually improved by means of many experiments and many failures. It was reserved for Pope to discover the trick, to make himself complete master of it, and to teach it to everybody else. From the time when his Pastorals appeared, heroic versification became matter of rule and compass; and, before long, all artists were on a level. Hundreds of dunces who never blundered on one happy thought or expression were able to write reams of couplets which, as far as euphony was concerned, could not be distinguished from those of Pope himself, and which very clever writers of the reign of Charles the Second,—Rochester; for example, or Marvel, or Oldham,—would have contemplated with admiring despair.

Ben Jonson was a great man, Hoole a very small man. But Hoole, coming after Pope, had learned how to manufacture decasyllable verses, and poured them forth by thousands and tens of thousands, all as well turned, as smooth, and as like each other as the blocks which have passed through Mr. Brunel's mill in the dockyard at Portsmouth. Ben's heroic couplets resemble blocks rudely hewn out by an unpractised hand with a blunt hatchet. Take as a specimen his translation of a celebrated passage in the *Æneid*:—

5 “This child our parent earth, stirred up with spite  
 Of all the gods, brought forth, and, as some write,  
 She was last sister of that giant race  
 That sought to scale Jove’s court, right swift of pace,  
 And swifter far of wing, a monster vast  
 And dreadful. Look, how many plumes are placed  
 On her huge corpse, so many waking eyes  
 Stick underneath, and, which may stranger rise  
 In the report, as many tongues she wears.”

10 Compare with these jagged misshapen distichs  
 the neat fabric which Hoole’s machine produces in  
 unlimited abundance. We take the first lines on  
 which we open in his version of Tasso. They are  
 neither better nor worse than the rest:—

15 “O thou, whoe’er thou art, whose steps are led,  
 By choice or fate, these lonely shores to tread,  
 No greater wonders east or west can boast  
 Than yon small island on the pleasing coast.  
 If e’er thy sight would blissful scenes explore,  
 20 The current pass, and seek the further shore.”

Ever since the time of Pope there has been a  
 glut of lines of this sort; and we are now as little  
 disposed to admire a man for being able to write  
 them, as for being able to write his name. But in  
 25 the days of William the Third such versification  
 was rare; and a rhymer who had any skill in it  
 passed for a great poet, just as in the dark ages a  
 person who could write his name passed for a great  
 clerk. Accordingly, Duke, Stepney, Granville,  
 30 Walsh, and others whose only title to fame was

that they said in tolerable metre what might have been as well said in prose, or what was not worth saying at all, were honored with marks of distinction which ought to be reserved for genius. With these Addison must have ranked, if he had not earned true and lasting glory by performances which very little resembled his juvenile poems. 5

Dryden was now busied with Virgil, and obtained from Addison a critical preface to the Georgics. In return for this service, and for other services of the same kind, the veteran poet, in the postscript to the translation of the Æneid, complimented his young friend with great liberality, and indeed with more liberality than sincerity. He affected to be afraid that his own performance would not sustain a comparison with the version of the fourth Georgic, by "the most ingenious Mr. Addison of Oxford." "After his bees," added Dryden, "my latter swarm is scarcely worth the hiving." 10 15 20

The time had now arrived when it was necessary for Addison to choose a calling. Everything seemed to point his course towards the clerical profession. His habits were regular, his opinions orthodox. His college had large ecclesiastical preferment in its gift, and boasts that it has given at least one bishop to almost every see in England. Dr. Lancelot Addison held an honorable place in the church, and had set his heart on seeing his son a clergyman. It is clear, from some expressions 25 30

in the young man's rhymes, that his intention was to take orders. But Charles Montague interfered. Montague had first brought himself into notice by verses, well-timed and not contemptibly written, 5 but never, we think, rising above mediocrity. Fortunately for himself and for his country, he early quitted poetry, in which he could never have attained a rank as high as that of Dorset or Rochester, and turned his mind to official and parliamentary business. It is written that the 10 ingenious person who undertook to instruct Rasselas, prince of Abyssinia, in the art of flying, ascended an eminence, waved his wings, sprang into the air, and instantly dropped into the lake. 15 But it is added that the wings, which were unable to support him through the sky, bore him up effectually as soon as he was in the water. This is no bad type of the fate of Charles Montague, and of men like him. When he attempted to soar 20 into the regions of poetical invention, he altogether failed; but, as soon as he had descended from that ethereal elevation into a lower and grosser element, his talents instantly raised him above the mass. He became a distinguished financier, debater, courtier, and party leader. He still 25 retained his fondness for the pursuits of his early days; but he showed that fondness not by wearying the public with his own feeble performances, but by discovering and encouraging literary excellence 30 in others. A crowd of wits and poets, who would

easily have vanquished him as a competitor, revered him as a judge and a patron. In his plans for the encouragement of learning, he was cordially supported by the ablest and most virtuous of his colleagues, the Lord Chancellor Somers. 5  
Though both these great statesmen had a sincere love of letters, it was not solely from a love of letters that they were desirous to enlist youths of high intellectual qualifications in the public service. 10  
The Revolution had altered the whole system of government. Before that event the press had been controlled by censors, and the parliament had sat only two months in eight years. Now the press was free, and had begun to exercise unprecedented influence on the public mind. 15  
Parliament met annually, and sat long. The chief power in the state had passed to the House of Commons. At such a conjuncture, it was natural that literary and oratorical talents should rise in value. There was danger that a government which neglected 20  
such talents might be subverted by them. It was, therefore, a profound and enlightened policy which led Montague and Somers to attach such talents to the Whig party, by the strongest ties both of interest and of gratitude. 25

It is remarkable that, in a neighboring country, we have recently seen similar effects follow from similar causes. The Revolution of July 1830 established representative government in France. The men of letters instantly rose to the highest im- 30

portance in the state. At the present moment most of the persons whom we see at the head both of the Administration and of the Opposition, have been professors, historians, journalists, poets. The  
 5 influence of the literary class in England, during the generation which followed the Revolution, was great, but by no means so great as it has lately been in France. For, in England, the aristocracy of intellect had to contend with a powerful and  
 10 deeply rooted aristocracy of a very different kind. France had no Somersets and Shrewsburies to keep down her Addisons and Priors.

It was in the year 1699, when Addison had just completed his twenty-seventh year, that the course  
 15 of his life was finally determined. Both the great chiefs of the Ministry were kindly disposed towards him. In political opinions he already was, what he continued to be through life, a firm, though a moderate Whig. He had addressed the  
 20 most polished and vigorous of his early English lines to Somers, and had dedicated to Montague a Latin poem, truly Virgilian, both in style and rhythm, on the peace of Ryswick. The wish of the young poet's great friends was, it should seem,  
 25 to employ him in the service of the crown abroad. But an intimate knowledge of the French language was a qualification indispensable to a diplomatist; and this qualification Addison had not acquired. It was, therefore, thought desirable that he should  
 30 pass some time on the Continent in preparing him-



self for official employment. His own means were not such as would enable him to travel; but a pension of three hundred pounds a year was procured for him by the interest of the Lord Chancellor. It seems to have been apprehended that some difficulty might be started by the rulers of Magdalene College. But the Chancellor of the Exchequer wrote in the strongest terms to Hough. The state—such was the purport of Montague's letter—could not, at that time, spare to the church such a man as Addison. Too many high civil posts were already occupied by adventurers, who, destitute of every liberal art and sentiment, at once pillaged and disgraced the country which they pretended to serve. It had become necessary to recruit for the public service from a very different class, from that class of which Addison was the representative. The close of the Minister's letter was remarkable. "I am called," he said, "an enemy of the church. But I will never do it any other injury than keeping Mr. Addison out of it."

This interference was successful; and, in the summer of 1699, Addison, made a rich man by his pension, and still retaining his fellowship, quitted his beloved Oxford, and set out on his travels. He crossed from Dover to Calais, proceeded to Paris, and was received there with great kindness and politeness by a kinsman of his friend Montague, Charles Earl of Manchester, who had just been appointed Ambassador to the Court of France.



The countess, a Whig and a toast, was probably as gracious as her lord; for Addison long retained an agreeable recollection of the impression which she at this time made on him, and, in some lively  
 5 lines written on the glasses of the Kit Cat Club, described the envy which her cheeks, glowing with the genuine bloom of England, had excited among the painted beauties of Versailles.

Louis the Fourteenth was at this time expiating  
 10 the vices of his youth by a devotion which had no root in reason, and bore no fruit of charity. The servile literature of France had changed its character to suit the changed character of the prince. No book appeared that had not an air of sanctity.  
 15 Racine, who was just dead, had passed the close of his life in writing sacred dramas; and Dacier was seeking for the Athanasian mysteries in Plato. Addison described this state of things in a short but lively and graceful letter to Montague.  
 20 Another letter, written about the same time to the Lord Chancellor, conveyed the strongest assurances of gratitude and attachment. "The only return I can make to your Lordship," said Addison, "will be to apply myself entirely to my business."  
 25 With this view he quitted Paris and repaired to Blois, a place where it was supposed that the French language was spoken in its highest purity, and where not a single Englishman could be found. Here he passed some months pleasantly  
 30 and profitably. Of his way of life at Blois, one of

his associates, an abbé named Philippeaux, gave an account to Joseph Spence. If this account is to be trusted, Addison studied much, mused much, talked little, had fits of absence, and either had no love affairs, or was too discreet to confide them to the abbé. A man who, even when surrounded by fellow-countrymen and fellow-students, had always been remarkably shy and silent, was not likely to be loquacious in a foreign tongue, and among foreign companions. But it is clear from Addison's letters, some of which were long after published in the *Guardian*, that, while he appeared to be absorbed in his own meditations, he was really observing French society with that keen and sly, yet not ill-natured side-glance, which was peculiarly his own.

From Blois he returned to Paris; and, having now mastered the French language, found great pleasure in the society of French philosophers and poets. He gave an account in a letter to Bishop Hough, of two highly interesting conversations, one with Malebranche, the other with Boileau. Malebranche expressed great partiality for the English, and extolled the genius of Newton, but shook his head when Hobbes was mentioned, and was indeed so unjust as to call the author of the *Leviathan* a poor silly creature. Addison's modesty restrained him from fully relating, in his letter, the circumstances of his introduction to Boileau. Boileau, having survived the friends

and rivals of his youth, old, deaf, and melancholy, lived in retirement, seldom went either to Court or to the Academy, and was almost inaccessible to strangers. Of the English and of English literature he knew nothing. He had hardly heard the name of Dryden. Some of our countrymen, in the warmth of their patriotism, have asserted that this ignorance must have been affected. We own that we see no ground for such a supposition. English literature was to the French of the age of Louis the Fourteenth what German literature was to our own grandfathers. Very few, we suspect, of the accomplished men who, sixty or seventy years ago, used to dine in Leicester Square with Sir Joshua, or at Streatham with Mrs. Thrale, had the slightest notion that Wieland was one of the first wits and poets, and Lessing, beyond all dispute, the first critic in Europe. Boileau knew just as little about the *Paradise Lost* and about Absalom and Achitophel; but he had read Addison's Latin poems, and admired them greatly. They had given him, he said, quite a new notion of the state of learning and taste among the English. Johnson will have it that these praises were insincere. "Nothing," says he, "is better known of Boileau than that he had an injudicious and peevish contempt of modern Latin; and therefore his profession of regard was probably the effect of his civility rather than approbation." Now, nothing is better known of Boileau than that he was singularly

sparing of compliments. We do not remember that either friendship or fear ever induced him to bestow praise on any composition which he did not approve. On literary questions, his caustic, disdainful, and self-confident spirit rebelled against that authority to which everything else in France bowed down. He had the spirit to tell Louis the Fourteenth firmly and even rudely, that his majesty knew nothing about poetry, and admired verses which were detestable. What was there in Addison's position that could induce the satirist, whose stern and fastidious temper had been the dread of two generations, to turn sycophant for the first and last time? Nor was Boileau's contempt of modern Latin either injudicious or peevish. He thought, indeed, that no poem of the first order would ever be written in a dead language. And did he think amiss? Has not the experience of centuries confirmed his opinion? Boileau also thought it probable that, in the best modern Latin, a writer of the Augustan age would have detected ludicrous improprieties. And who can think otherwise? What modern scholar can honestly declare that he sees the smallest impurity in the style of Livy? Yet is it not certain that, in the style of Livy, Pollio, whose taste had been formed on the banks of the Tiber, detected the inelegant idiom of the Po? Has any modern scholar understood Latin better than Frederic the Great understood French? Yet is it not notorious

that Frederic the Great, after reading, speaking,  
 writing French, and nothing but French, during  
 more than half a century, after unlearning his  
 mother tongue in order to learn French, after liv-  
 5 ing familiarly during many years with French  
 associates, could not, to the last, compose in  
 French, without imminent risk of committing  
 some mistake which would have moved a smile in  
 the literary circles of Paris? Do we believe that  
 10 Erasmus and Fracastorius wrote Latin as well as  
 Dr. Robertson and Sir Walter Scott wrote Eng-  
 lish? And are there not in the Dissertation on In-  
 dia, the last of Dr. Robertson's works, in Waverley,  
 in Marmion, Scotticisms at which a London  
 15 apprentice would laugh? But does it follow,  
 because we think thus, that we can find nothing to  
 admire in the noble alcaics of Gray, or in the play-  
 ful elegiacs of Vincent Bourne? Surely not. Nor  
 was Boileau so ignorant or tasteless as to be incapa-  
 20 ble of appreciating good modern Latin. In the  
 very letter to which Johnson alludes, Boileau says,  
 "Ne croyez pas pourtant que je veuille par là  
 blâmer les vers Latins que vous m'avez envoyés  
 d'un de vos illustres académiciens. Je les ai  
 25 trouvés fort beaux, et dignes de Vida et de San-  
 nazar, mais non pas d'Horace et de Virgile."  
 Several poems in modern Latin have been praised  
 by Boileau quite as liberally as it was his habit to  
 praise anything. He says, for example, of the  
 30 Père Fraguier's epigrams, that Catullus seems to

have come to life again. But the best proof that Boileau did not feel the undiscerning contempt for modern Latin verses which has been imputed to him, is that he wrote and published Latin verses in several metres. Indeed, it happens, curiously enough, that the most severe censure ever pronounced by him on modern Latin is conveyed in Latin hexameters. We allude to the fragment which begins:—

“Quid numeris iterum me balbutire Latinis,  
 Longe Alpes citra natum de patre Sicambro,  
 Musa, jubes?”

For these reasons we feel assured that the praise which Boileau bestowed on the *Machinæ Gesticulantes*, and the *Gerano-Pygmæomachia*, was sincere. He certainly opened himself to Addison with a freedom which was a sure indication of esteem. Literature was the chief subject of conversation. The old man talked on his favorite theme much and well,—indeed, as his young hearer thought, incomparably well. Boileau had undoubtedly some of the qualities of a great critic. He wanted imagination; but he had strong sense. His literary code was formed on narrow principles; but in applying it he showed great judgment and penetration. In mere style, abstracted from the ideas of which style is the garb, his taste was excellent. He was well acquainted with the great Greek writers, and, though unable fully to appreciate their creative genius, admired the majestic

simplicity of their manner, and had learned from them to despise bombast and tinsel. It is easy, we think, to discover in the *Spectator* and the *Guardian* traces of the influence, in part salutary and  
 5 in part pernicious, which the mind of Boileau had on the mind of Addison.

While Addison was at Paris, an event took place which made that capital a disagreeable residence for an Englishman and a Whig.  
 10 Charles, second of the name, King of Spain, died, and bequeathed his dominions to Philip, Duke of Anjou, a younger son of the Dauphin. The King of France, in direct violation of his engagements, both with Great Britain and with the States  
 15 General, accepted the bequest on behalf of his grandson. The house of Bourbon was at the summit of human grandeur. England had been outwitted, and found herself in a situation at once degrading and perilous. The people of France,  
 20 not presaging the calamities by which they were destined to expiate the perfidy of their sovereign, went mad with pride and delight. Every man looked as if a great estate had just been left him. "The French conversation," said Addison, "begins  
 25 to grow insupportable; that which was before the vainest nation in the world, is now worse than ever." Sick of the arrogant exultation of the Parisians, and probably foreseeing that the peace between France and England could not be of long  
 30 duration, he set off for Italy.



In December, 1700, he embarked at Marseilles. As he glided along the Ligurian coast, he was delighted by the sight of myrtles and olive-trees, which retained their verdure under the winter solstice. Soon, however, he encountered one of the black storms of the Mediterranean. The captain of the ship gave up all for lost, and confessed himself to a capuchin who happened to be on board. The English heretic, in the meantime, fortified himself against the terrors of death with devotions of a very different kind. How strong an impression this perilous voyage made on him appears from the ode, "How are thy servants blest, O Lord!" which was long after published in the *Spectator*. After some days of discomfort and danger, Addison was glad to land at Savona, and to make his way, over mountains where no road had yet been hewn out by art, to the city of Genoa.

At Genoa, still ruled by her own doge, and by the nobles whose names were inscribed on her Book of Gold, Addison made a short stay. He admired the narrow streets overhung by long lines of towering palaces, the walls rich with frescoes, the gorgeous temple of the Annunciation, and the tapestries whereon were recorded the long glories of the house of Doria. Thence he hastened to Milan, where he contemplated the Gothic magnificence of the cathedral with more wonder than pleasure. He passed Lake Benacus while a gale



was blowing, and saw the waves raging as they raged when Virgil looked upon them. At Venice, then the gayest spot in Europe, the traveller spent the Carnival, the gayest season of the year, in the  
 5 mi lst of masks, dances, and serenades. Here he was at once diverted and provoked by the absurd dramatic pieces which then disgraced the Italian stage. To one of those pieces, however, he was indebted for a valuable hint. He was present  
 10 when a ridiculous play on the death of Cato was performed. Cato, it seems, was in love with a daughter of Scipio. The lady had given her heart to Cæsar. The rejected lover determined to destroy himself. He appeared seated in his library, a  
 15 dagger in his hand, a Plutarch and a Tasso before him; and, in this position, he pronounced a soliloquy before he struck the blow. We are surprised that so remarkable a circumstance as this should have escaped the notice of all Addison's  
 20 biographers. There cannot, we conceive, be the smallest doubt that this scene, in spite of its absurdities and anachronisms, struck the traveller's imagination, and suggested to him the thought of bringing Cato on the English stage. It is well  
 25 known that about this time he began his tragedy, and that he finished the first four acts before he returned to England.

On his way from Venice to Rome, he was drawn some miles out of the beaten road by a wish to see  
 30 the smallest independent state in Europe. On a

rock where the snow still lay, though the Italian spring was now far advanced, was perched the little fortress of San Marino. The roads which led to the secluded town were so bad that few travellers had ever visited it, and none had ever published an account of it. Addison could not suppress a good-natured smile at the simple manners and institutions of this singular community. But he observed, with the exultation of a Whig, that the rude mountain tract which formed the territory of the republic swarmed with an honest, healthy, and contented peasantry, while the rich plain which surrounded the metropolis of civil and spiritual tyranny was scarcely less desolate than the uncleared wilds of America.

At Rome Addison remained on his first visit only long enough to catch a glimpse of St. Peter's and of the Pantheon. His haste is the more extraordinary because the Holy Week was close at hand. He has given no hint which can enable us to pronounce why he chose to fly from a spectacle which every year allures from distant regions persons of far less taste and sensibility than his. Possibly, travelling, as he did, at the charge of a government distinguished by its enmity to the Church of Rome, he may have thought that it would be imprudent in him to assist at the most magnificent rite of that church. Many eyes would be upon him, and he might find it difficult to behave in such a manner as to give offence neither to his

patrons in England, nor to those among whom he resided. Whatever his motives may have been, he turned his back on the most august and affecting ceremony which is known among men, and posted  
 5 along the Appian way to Naples.

Naples was then destitute of what are now, perhaps, its chief attractions. The lovely bay and the awful mountain were indeed there; but a farmhouse stood on the theatre of Herculaneum, and  
 10 rows of vines grew over the streets of Pompeii. The temples of Pæstum had not indeed been hidden from the eye of man by any great convulsion of nature; but, strange to say, their existence was a secret even to artists and antiquaries. Though  
 15 situated within a few hours' journey of a great capital, where Salvator had not long before painted, and where Vico was then lecturing, those noble remains were as little known to Europe as the ruined cities overgrown by the forests of Yuca-  
 20 tan. What was to be seen at Naples Addison saw. He climbed Vesuvius, explored the tunnel of Posilipo, and wandered among the vines and almond-trees of Capreæ. But neither the wonders of nature, nor those of art, could so occupy his  
 25 attention as to prevent him from noticing, though cursorily, the abuses of the government and the misery of the people. The great kingdom which had just descended to Philip the Fifth, was in a state of paralytic dotage. Even Castile and Ara-  
 30 gon were sunk in wretchedness. Yet, compared

with the Italian dependencies of the Spanish crown, Castile and Aragon might be called prosperous. It is clear that all the observations which Addison made in Italy tended to confirm him in the political opinions which he had adopted at home. To the last he always spoke of foreign travel as the best cure for Jacobitism. In his *Freeholder* the Tory fox-hunter asks what travelling is good for, except to teach a man to jabber French and to talk against passive obedience.

From Naples, Addison returned to Rome by sea, along the coast which his favorite Virgil had celebrated. The felucca passed the headland where the oar and trumpet were placed by the Trojan adventurers on the tomb of Misenus, and anchored at night under the shelter of the fabled promontory of Circe. The voyage ended in the Tiber, still overhung with dark verdure, and still turbid with yellow sand, as when it met the eyes of Æneas. From the ruined port of Ostia, the stranger hurried to Rome; and at Rome he remained during those hot and sickly months, when, even in the Augustan age, all who could make their escape fled from mad dogs and from streets black with funerals, to gather the first figs of the season in the country. It is probable that, when he, long after, poured forth in verse his gratitude to the Providence which had enabled him to breathe unhurt in tainted air, he was thinking of the August and September which he passed at Rome.

It was not till the latter end of October that he tore himself away from the masterpieces of ancient and modern art which are collected in the city so long the mistress of the world. He then journeyed  
5 northward, passed through Sienna, and for a moment forgot his prejudices in favor of classic architecture as he looked on the magnificent cathedral. At Florence he spent some days with the Duke of Shrewsbury, who, cloyed with the  
10 pleasures of ambition, and impatient of its pains, fearing both parties, and loving neither, had determined to hide in an Italian retreat talents and accomplishments which, if they had been united with fixed principles and civil courage, might have  
15 made him the foremost man of his age. These days, we are told, passed pleasantly; and we can easily believe it. For Addison was a delightful companion when he was at his ease; and the duke, though he seldom forgot that he was a Talbot, had  
20 the invaluable art of putting at ease all who came near him.

Addison gave some time to Florence, and especially to the sculptures in the Museum, which he preferred even to those of the Vatican. He then  
25 pursued his journey through a country in which the ravages of the last war were still discernible, and in which all men were looking forward with dread to a still fiercer conflict. Eugene had already descended from the Rhætian Alps, to dispute with Catinat the rich plain of Lombardy.  
30

The faithless ruler of Savoy was still reckoned among the allies of Louis. England had not yet actually declared war against France: but Manchester had left Paris; and the negotiations which produced the Grand Alliance against the house of Bourbon were in progress. Under such circumstances, it was desirable for an English traveller to reach neutral ground without delay. Addison resolved to cross Mont Cenis. It was December; and the road was very different from that which now reminds the stranger of the power and genius of Napoleon. The winter, however, was mild; and the passage was, for those times, easy. To this journey Addison alluded when, in the ode which we have already quoted, he said that for him the Divine goodness had warmed the hoary Alpine hills.

It was in the midst of the eternal snow that he composed his Epistle to his friend Montague, now Lord Halifax. That Epistle, once widely renowned, is now known only to curious readers, and will hardly be considered by those to whom it is known as in any perceptible degree heightening Addison's fame. It is, however, decidedly superior to any English composition which he had previously published. Nay, we think it quite as good as any poem in heroic metre which appeared during the interval between the death of Dryden and the publication of the Essay on Criticism. It contains passages as good as the second-rate passages

of Pope, and would have added to the reputation of Parnell or Prior.

But, whatever be the literary merits or defects of the Epistle, it undoubtedly does honor to the principles and spirit of the author. Halifax had now  
 5 nothing to give. He had fallen from power, had been held up to obloquy, had been impeached by the House of Commons, and, though his peers had dismissed the impeachment, had, as it seemed,  
 10 little chance of ever again filling high office. The Epistle, written at such a time, is one among many proofs that there was no mixture of cowardice or meanness in the suavity and moderation which distinguished Addison from all the other public men  
 15 of those stormy times.

At Geneva, the traveller learned that a partial change of ministry had taken place in England, and that the Earl of Manchester had become Secretary of State. Manchester exerted himself to serve his  
 20 young friend. It was thought advisable that an English agent should be near the person of Eugene in Italy; and Addison, whose diplomatic education was now finished, was the man selected. He was preparing to enter on his honorable functions,  
 25 when all his prospects were for a time darkened by the death of William the Third.

Anne had long felt a strong aversion, personal, political, and religious, to the Whig party. That aversion appeared in the first measures of her  
 30 reign. Manchester was deprived of the seals.



after he had held them only a few weeks. Neither Somers nor Halifax was sworn of the Privy Council. Addison shared the fate of his three patrons. His hopes of employment in the public service were at an end; his pension was stopped; and it was necessary for him to support himself by his own exertions. He became tutor to a young English traveller, and appears to have rambled with his pupil over great part of Switzerland and Germany. At this time he wrote his pleasing treatise on Medals. It was not published till after his death; but several distinguished scholars saw the manuscript, and gave just praise to the grace of the style, and to the learning and ingenuity evinced by the quotations.

From Germany, Addison repaired to Holland, where he learned the melancholy news of his father's death. After passing some months in the United Provinces, he returned about the close of the year 1703 to England. He was there cordially received by his friends, and introduced by them into the Kit Cat Club, a society in which were collected all the various talents and accomplishments which then gave lustre to the Whig party.

Addison was, during some months after his return from the Continent, hard pressed by pecuniary difficulties. But it was soon in the power of his noble patrons to serve him effectually. A political change, silent and gradual, but of the highest importance, was in daily progress. The



accession of Anne had been hailed by the Tories with transports of joy and hope; and for a time it seemed that the Whigs had fallen never to rise again. The throne was surrounded by men supposed to be attached to the prerogative and to the church; and among these none stood so high in the favor of the sovereign as the Lord-Treasurer Godolphin and the Captain-General Marlborough.

The country gentlemen and country clergymen had fully expected that the policy of these ministers would be directly opposed to that which had been almost constantly followed by William; that the landed interest would be favored at the expense of trade; that no additions would be made to the funded debt; that the privileges conceded to Dissenters by the late king would be curtailed, if not withdrawn; that the war with France, if there must be such a war, would, on our part, be almost entirely naval; and that the government would avoid close connections with foreign powers, and, above all, with Holland.

But the country gentlemen and country clergymen were fated to be deceived, not for the last time. The prejudices and passions which raged without control in vicarages, in cathedral closes, and in the manor-houses of fox-hunting squires, were not shared by the chiefs of the ministry. Those statesmen saw that it was both for the public interest, and for their own interest, to adopt a Whig policy, at least as respected the alliances of

the country and the conduct of the war. But, if the foreign policy of the Whigs were adopted, it was impossible to abstain from adopting also their financial policy. The natural consequences followed. The rigid Tories were alienated from the government. The votes of the Whigs became necessary to it. The votes of the Whigs could be secured only by further concessions; and further concessions the Queen was induced to make. 5

At the beginning of the year 1704, the state of parties bore a close analogy to the state of parties in 1826. In 1826, as in 1704, there was a Tory ministry divided into two hostile sections. The position of Mr. Canning and his friends in 1826 corresponded to that which Marlborough and Godolphin occupied in 1704. Nottingham and Jersey were in 1704 what Lord Eldon and Lord Westmoreland were in 1826. The Whigs of 1704 were in a situation resembling that in which the Whigs of 1826 stood. In 1704, Somers, Halifax, Sunderland, Cowper, were not in office. There was no avowed coalition between them and the moderate Tories. It is probable that no direct communication tending to such a coalition had yet taken place; yet all men saw that such a coalition was inevitable, nay, that it was already half formed. Such, or nearly such, was the state of things when tidings arrived of the great battle fought at Blenheim on the 13th August, 1704. By the Whigs the news was hailed with transports 30

of joy and pride. No fault, no cause of quarrel, could be remembered by them against the commander whose genius had, in one day, changed the face of Europe, saved the Imperial throne, humbled the house of Bourbon, and secured the Act of Settlement against foreign hostility. The feeling of the Tories was very different. They could not indeed, without imprudence, openly express regret at an event so glorious to their country; but their congratulations were so cold and sullen as to give deep disgust to the victorious general and his friends.

Godolphin was not a reading man. Whatever time he could spare from business he was in the habit of spending at Newmarket or at the card-table. But he was not absolutely indifferent to poetry; and he was too intelligent an observer not to perceive that literature was a formidable engine of political warfare, and that the great Whig leaders had strengthened their party and raised their character by extending a liberal and judicious patronage to good writers. He was mortified, and not without reason, by the exceeding badness of the poems which appeared in honor of the battle of Blenheim. One of those poems has been rescued from oblivion by the exquisite absurdity of three lines:—

“Think of two thousand gentlemen at least,  
And each man mounted on his capering beast;  
Into the Danube they were pushed by shoals.”

Where to procure better verses the treasurer did not know. He understood how to negotiate a

loan, or remit a subsidy; he was also well versed in the history of running horses and fighting cocks; but his acquaintance among the poets was very small. He consulted Halifax; but Halifax affected to decline the office of adviser. He had, he said, done his best, when he had power, to encourage men whose abilities and acquirements might do honor to their country. 'Those times were over. Other maxims had prevailed. Merit was suffered to pine in obscurity; and the public money was squandered on the undeserving. "I do know," he added, "a gentleman who would celebrate the battle in a manner worthy of the subject, but I will not name him." Godolphin, who was an expert at the soft answer which turneth away wrath, and who was under the necessity of paying court to the Whigs, gently replied that there was too much ground for Halifax's complaints, but that what was amiss should in time be rectified, and that in the meantime the services of a man such as Halifax had described should be liberally rewarded. Halifax then mentioned Addison; but, mindful of the dignity as well as of the pecuniary interest of his friend, insisted that the minister should apply in the most courteous manner to Addison himself; and this Godolphin promised to do.

Addison then occupied a garret up three pair of stairs, over a small shop in the Haymarket. In this humble lodging he was surprised, on the

morning which followed the conversation between  
 Godolphin and Halifax, by a visit from no less a  
 person than the Right Honorable Henry Boyle,  
 then Chancellor of the Exchequer, and afterwards  
 5 Lord Carleton. This high-born minister had been  
 sent by the Lord-Treasurer as ambassador to the  
 needy poet. Addison readily undertook the pro-  
 posed task, a task which, to so good a Whig, was  
 probably a pleasure. When the poem was little  
 10 more than half finished, he showed it to Godol-  
 phin, who was delighted with it, and particularly  
 with the famous similitude of the Angel. Addison  
 was instantly appointed to a commissionership  
 worth about two hundred pounds a year, and was  
 15 assured that this appointment was only an earnest  
 of greater favors.

The Campaign came forth, and was as much  
 admired by the public as by the minister. It  
 pleases us less on the whole than the Epistle to  
 20 Halifax. Yet it undoubtedly ranks high among  
 the poems which appeared during the interval  
 between the death of Dryden and the dawn of  
 Pope's genius. The chief merit of the Campaign,  
 we think, is that which was noticed by Johnson,  
 25 the manly and rational rejection of fiction. The  
 first great poet whose works have come down to us  
 sang of war long before war became a science or a  
 trade. If, in his time, there was enmity between  
 two little Greek towns, each poured forth its  
 30 crowd of citizens, ignorant of discipline, and

armed with implements of labor rudely turned into weapons. On each side appeared conspicuous a few chiefs, whose wealth had enabled them to procure good armor, horses, and chariots, and whose leisure had enabled them to practise military exercises. One such chief, if he were a man of great strength, agility, and courage, would probably be more formidable than twenty common men; and the force and dexterity with which he flung his spear might have no inconsiderable share in deciding the event of the day. Such were probably the battles with which Homer was familiar. But Homer related the actions of men of a former generation, of men who sprang from the gods, and communed with the gods face to face; of men, one of whom could with ease hurl rocks which two sturdy hinds of a later period would be unable even to lift. He therefore naturally represented their martial exploits as resembling in kind, but far surpassing in magnitude, those of the stoutest and most expert combatants of his own age. Achilles, clad in celestial armor, drawn by celestial coursers, grasping the spear which none but himself could raise, driving all Troy and Lycia before him, and choking Scamander with dead, was only a magnificent exaggeration of the real hero, who, strong, fearless, accustomed to the use of weapons, guarded by a shield and helmet of the best Sidonian fabric, and whirled along by horses of Thessalian breed, struck down with his own right arm, foe after foe.

In all rude societies similar notions are found. There are at this day countries where the Life-guardsmen Shaw would be considered as a much greater warrior than the Duke of Wellington. 5 Bonaparte loved to describe the astonishment with which the Mamelukes looked at his diminutive figure. Mourad Bey, distinguished above all his fellows by his bodily strength, and by the skill with which he managed his horse and his sabre, 10 could not believe that a man who was scarcely five feet high, and rode like a butcher, could be the greatest soldier in Europe.

Homer's descriptions of war had therefore as much truth as poetry requires. But truth was 15 altogether wanting to the performances of those who, writing about battles which had scarcely anything in common with the battles of his times, servilely imitated his manner. The folly of Silius Italicus, in particular, is positively nauseous. He 20 undertook to record in verse the vicissitudes of a great struggle between generals of the first order; and his narrative is made up of the hideous wounds which these generals inflicted with their own hands. Asdrubal flings a spear, which grazes the 25 shoulder of the consul Nero; but Nero sends his spear into Asdrubal's side. Fabius slays Thuris and Butes and Maris and Arses, and the long-haired Adherbes, and the gigantic Thydis, and Sapharus and Monæsus, and the trumpeter Mor- 30 inus. Hannibal runs Perusinus through the groin

with a stake, and breaks the backbone of Telesinus with a huge stone. This detestable fashion was copied in modern times, and continued to prevail down to the age of Addison. Several versifiers had described William turning thousands to flight by his single prowess, and dyeing the Boyne with Irish blood. Nay, so estimable a writer as John Philips, the author of the *Splendid Shilling*, represented Marlborough as having won the battle of Blenheim merely by strength of muscle and skill in fence. The following lines may serve as an example:—

“Churchill, viewing where  
 The violence of Tallard most prevailed,  
 Came to oppose his slaughtering arm. With speed  
 Precipitate he rode, urging his way  
 O'er hills of gasping heroes, and fallen steeds  
 Rolling in death. Destruction, grim with blood,  
 Attends his furious course. Around his head  
 The glowing balls play innocent, while he  
 With dire impetuous sway deals fatal blows  
 Among the flying Gauls. In Gallic blood  
 He dyes his reeking sword, and strews the ground  
 With headless ranks. What can they do? Or how  
 Withstand his wide-destroying sword?”

Addison, with excellent sense and taste, departed from this ridiculous fashion. He reserved his praise for the qualities which made Marlborough truly great,—energy, sagacity, military science. But, above all, the poet extolled the firmness of that mind which, in the midst of con-



fusion, uproar, and slaughter, examined and disposed everything with the serene wisdom of a higher intelligence.

Here it was that he introduced the famous comparison of Marlborough to an Angel guiding the whirlwind. We will not dispute the general justice of Johnson's remarks on this passage. But we must point out one circumstance which appears to have escaped all the critics. The extraordinary effect which this simile produced when it first appeared, and which to the following generation seemed inexplicable, is doubtless to be chiefly attributed to a line, which most readers now regard as a feeble parenthesis:—

15       “Such as, of late, o'er pale Britannia passed.”

Addison spoke, not of a storm, but of the storm. The great tempest of November, 1703, the only tempest which in our latitude has equalled the rage of a tropical hurricane, had left a dreadful recollection in the minds of all men. No other tempest was ever in this country the occasion of a parliamentary address or of a public fast. Whole fleets had been cast away. Large mansions had been blown down. One prelate had been buried beneath the ruins of his palace. London and Bristol had presented the appearance of cities just sacked. Hundreds of families were still in mourning. The prostrate trunks of large trees, and the ruins of houses, still attested, in all the southern

20  
25  
30

counties, the fury of the blast. The popularity which the simile of the Angel enjoyed among Addison's contemporaries, has always seemed to us to be a remarkable instance of the advantage which, in rhetoric and poetry, the particular has 5 over the general.

Soon after the Campaign, was published Addison's Narrative of his Travels in Italy. The first effect produced by this narrative was disappointment. The crowd of readers who expected politics 10 and scandal, speculations on the projects of Victor Amadeus, and anecdotes about the jollities of convents and amours of cardinals and nuns, were confounded by finding that the writer's mind was much more occupied by the war between the 15 Trojans and Rutulians than by the war between France and Austria; and that he seemed to have heard no scandal of later date than the gallantries of the Empress Faustina. In time, however, the judgment of the many was overruled by that of 20 the few; and, before the book was reprinted, it was so eagerly sought that it sold for five times the original price. It is still read with pleasure: the style is pure and flowing; the classical quotations and allusions are numerous and happy; and we are 25 now and then charmed by that singularly humane and delicate humor in which Addison excelled all men. Yet this agreeable work, even when considered merely as the history of a literary tour, may justly be censured on account of its faults of 30

omission. We have already said that, though rich in extracts from the Latin poets, it contains scarcely any references to the Latin orators and historians. We must add, that it contains little, or rather no, information respecting the history and literature of modern Italy. To the best of our remembrance, Addison does not mention Dante, Petrarch, Boccaccio, Boiardo, Berni, Lorenzo de' Medici, or Machiavelli. He coldly tells us that at Ferrara he saw the tomb of Ariosto, and that at Venice he heard the gondoliers sing verses of Tasso. But for Tasso and Ariosto he cared far less than for Valerius Flaccus and Sidonius Apollinaris. The gentle flow of the Ticin brings a line of Silius to his mind. The sulphurous steam of Albula suggests to him several passages of Martial. But he has not a word to say of the illustrious dead of Santa Croce; he crosses the wood of Ravenna without recollecting the Spectre Huntsman; and wanders up and down Rimini without one thought of Francesca. At Paris he had eagerly sought an introduction to Boileau; but he seems not to have been at all aware that at Florence he was in the vicinity of a poet with whom Boileau could not sustain a comparison, of the greatest lyric poet of modern times, Vincenzio Filicaja. This is the more remarkable, because Filicaja was the favorite poet of the accomplished Somers, under whose protection Addison travelled, and to whom the account of the Travels is dedicated. The truth is,

that Addison knew little, and cared less, about the literature of modern Italy. His favorite models were Latin. His favorite critics were French. Half the Tuscan poetry that he had read seemed to him monstrous, and the other half tawdry. 5

His Travels were followed by the lively opera of Rosamond. This piece was ill set to music, and therefore failed on the stage, but it completely succeeded in print, and is indeed excellent in its kind. The smoothness with which the verses glide, and 10 the elasticity with which they bound, is, to our ears at least, very pleasing. We are inclined to think that if Addison had left heroic couplets to Pope, and blank verse to Rowe, and had employed himself in writing airy and spirited songs, his reputa- 15 tion as a poet would have stood far higher than it now does. Some years after his death, Rosamond was set to new music by Doctor Arne; and was performed with complete success. Several passages long retained their popularity, and were 20 daily sung, during the latter part of George the Second's reign, at all the harpsichords in England.

While Addison thus amused himself, his prospects, and the prospects of his party, were constantly becoming brighter and brighter. In the 25 spring of 1705 the ministers were freed from the restraint imposed by a House of Commons in which Tories of the most perverse class had the ascendancy. The elections were favorable to the Whigs. The coalition which had been tacitly and 30

gradually formed was now openly avowed. The Great Seal was given to Cowper. Somers and Halifax were sworn of the Council. Halifax was sent in the following year to carry the decorations  
5 of the order of the garter to the Electoral Prince of Hanover, and was accompanied on this honorable mission by Addison, who had just been made Undersecretary of State. The Secretary of State under whom Addison first served was Sir Charles  
10 Hedges, a Tory. But Hedges was soon dismissed to make room for the most vehement of Whigs, Charles, Earl of Sunderland. In every department of the state, indeed, the High Churchmen were compelled to give place to their opponents. At the  
15 close of 1707, the Tories who still remained in office strove to rally, with Harley at their head. But the attempt, though favored by the Queen, who had always been a Tory at heart, and who had now quarrelled with the Duchess of Marlborough,  
20 was unsuccessful. The time was not yet. The Captain General was at the height of popularity and glory. The Low Church party had a majority in Parliament. The country squires and rectors, though occasionally uttering a savage growl, were  
25 for the most part in a state of torpor, which lasted till they were roused into activity, and indeed into madness, by the prosecution of Sacheverell. Harley and his adherents were compelled to retire. The victory of the Whigs was complete. At the  
30 general election of 1708, their strength in the

House of Commons became irresistible; and before the end of that year, Somers was made Lord President of the Council, and Wharton Lord Lieutenant of Ireland.

Addison sat for Malmsbury in the House of Commons which was elected in 1708. But the House of Commons was not the field for him. The bashfulness of his nature made his wit and eloquence useless in debate. He once rose, but could not overcome his diffidence, and ever after remained silent. Nobody can think it strange that a great writer should fail as a speaker. But many, probably, will think it strange that Addison's failure as a speaker should have had no unfavorable effect on his success as a politician. In our time, a man of high rank and great fortune might, though speaking very little and very ill, hold a considerable post. But it would now be inconceivable that a mere adventurer, a man who, when out of office, must live by his pen, should in a few years become successively Undersecretary of State, Chief Secretary for Ireland, and Secretary of State, without some oratorical talent. Addison, without high birth, and with little property, rose to a post which dukes, the heads of the great houses of Talbot, Russell, and Bentinck, have thought it an honor to fill. Without opening his lips in debate, he rose to a post the highest that Chatham or Fox ever reached. And this he did before he had been nine years in Parliament. We must look for the

explanation of this seeming miracle to the peculiar  
 circumstances in which that generation was placed.  
 During the interval which elapsed between the  
 time when the Censorship of the Press ceased, and  
 5 the time when parliamentary proceedings began to  
 be freely reported, literary talents were, to a public  
 man, of much more importance, and oratorical  
 talents of much less importance, than in our time.  
 At present, the best way of giving rapid and wide  
 10 publicity to a fact or an argument is to introduce  
 that fact or argument into a speech made in Parlia-  
 ment. If a political tract were to appear superior  
 to the *Conduct of the Allies*, or to the best num-  
 bers of the *Freeholder*, the circulation of such a  
 :5 tract would be languid indeed when compared with  
 the circulation of every remarkable word uttered in  
 the deliberations of the legislature. A speech made  
 in the House of Commons at four in the morning  
 is on thirty thousand tables before ten. A speech  
 20 made on the Monday is read on the Wednesday by  
 multitudes in Antrim and Aberdeenshire. The  
 orator, by the help of the shorthand writer, has to  
 a great extent superseded the pamphleteer. It  
 was not so in the reign of Anne. The best speech  
 25 could then produce no effect except on those who  
 heard it. It was only by means of the press that  
 the opinion of the public without doors could be  
 influenced; and the opinion of the public without  
 doors could not but be of the highest impor-  
 30 tance in a country governed by parliaments, and



indeed at that time governed by triennial parliaments. The pen was, therefore, a more formidable political engine than the tongue. Mr. Pitt and Mr. Fox contended only in Parliament. But Walpole and Pulteney, the Pitt and Fox of an earlier period, had not done half of what was necessary, when they sat down amidst the acclamations of the House of Commons. They had still to plead their cause before the country, and this they could do only by means of the press. Their works are now forgotten. But it is certain that there were in Grub Street few more assiduous scribblers of Thoughts, Letters, Answers, Remarks, than these two great chiefs of parties. Pulteney, when leader of the Opposition, and possessed of thirty thousand a year, edited the *Craftsman*. Walpole, though not a man of literary habits, was the author of at least ten pamphlets, and retouched and corrected many more. These facts sufficiently show of how great importance literary assistance then was to the contending parties. St. John was certainly, in Anne's reign, the best Tory speaker; Cowper was probably the best Whig speaker. But it may well be doubted whether St. John did so much for the Tories as Swift, and whether Cowper did so much for the Whigs as Addison. When these things are duly considered, it will not be thought strange that Addison should have climbed higher in the state than any other Englishman has ever, by means



merely of literary talents, been able to climb. Swift would, in all probability, have climbed as high, if he had not been encumbered by his cassock and his pudding sleeves. As far as the homage of the great went, Swift had as much of it as if he had been Lord-Treasurer.

To the influence which Addison derived from his literary talents was added all the influence which arises from character. The world, always ready to think the worst of needy political adventurers, was forced to make one exception. Restlessness, violence, audacity, laxity of principle, are the vices ordinarily attributed to that class of men. But faction itself could not deny that Addison had, through all changes of fortune, been strictly faithful to his early opinions, and to his early friends; that his integrity was without stain; that his whole deportment indicated a fine sense of the becoming; that in the utmost heat of controversy, his zeal was tempered by a regard for truth, humanity, and social decorum; that no outrage could ever provoke him to retaliation unworthy of a Christian and a gentleman; and that his only faults were a too sensitive delicacy, and a modesty which amounted to bashfulness.

He was undoubtedly one of the most popular men of his time; and much of his popularity he owed, we believe, to that very timidity which his friends lamented. That timidity often prevented him from exhibiting his talents to the best advan-

tage. But it propitiated Nemesis. It averted that envy which would otherwise have been excited by fame so splendid, and by so rapid an elevation. No man is so great a favorite with the public as he who is at once an object of admiration, of respect, and of pity; and such were the feelings which Addison inspired. Those who enjoyed the privilege of hearing his familiar conversation, declared with one voice that it was superior even to his writings. The brilliant Mary Montague said, that she had known all the wits, and that Addison was the best company in the world. The malignant Pope was forced to own, that there was a charm in Addison's talk which could be found nowhere else. Swift, when burning with animosity against the Whigs, could not but confess to Stella that, after all, he had never known any associate so agreeable as Addison. Steele, an excellent judge of lively conversation, said, that the conversation of Addison was at once the most polite, and the most mirthful, that could be imagined; that it was Terence and Catullus in one, heightened by an exquisite something which was neither Terence nor Catullus, but Addison alone. Young, an excellent judge of serious conversation, said, that when Addison was at his ease, he went on in a noble strain of thought and language, so as to chain the attention of every hearer. Nor were Addison's great colloquial powers more admirable than the courtesy and the softness of heart which

appeared in his conversation. At the same time, it would be too much to say that he was wholly devoid of the malice which is, perhaps, inseparable from a keen sense of the ludicrous. He had one  
 5 habit which both Swift and Stella applauded, and which we hardly know how to blame. If his first attempts to set a presuming dunce right were ill received, he changed his tone, "assented with civil leer," and lured the flattered coxcomb deeper and  
 10 deeper into absurdity. That such was his practice we should, we think, have guessed from his works. The *Tatler's* criticisms on Mr. Softly's sonnet, and the *Spectator's* dialogue with the politician who is so zealous for the honor of Lady Q—p—t—s, are  
 15 excellent specimens of this innocent mischief.

Such were Addison's talents for conversation. But his rare gifts were not exhibited to crowds or to strangers. As soon as he entered a large company, as soon as he saw an unknown face, his lips  
 20 were sealed, and his manners became constrained. None who met him only in great assemblies would have been able to believe that he was the same man who had often kept a few friends listening and laughing round a table, from the time when the  
 25 play ended, till the clock of St. Paul's in Covent Garden struck four. Yet, even at such a table he was not seen to the best advantage. To enjoy his conversation in the highest perfection, it was necessary to be alone with him, and to hear him, in  
 30 his own phrase, think aloud. "There is no such

thing," he used to say, "as real conversation, but between two persons."

This timidity, a timidity surely neither ungraceful nor unamiable, led Addison into the two most serious faults which can with justice be imputed to him. He found that wine broke the spell which lay on his fine intellect, and was therefore too easily seduced into convivial excess. Such excess was in that age regarded, even by grave men, as the most venial of all peccadilloes, and was so far from being a mark of ill-breeding, that it was almost essential to the character of a fine gentleman. But the smallest speck is seen on a white ground; and almost all the biographers of Addison have said something about this failing. Of any other statesman or writer of Queen Anne's reign, we should no more think of saying that he sometimes took too much wine, than that he wore a long wig and a sword.

To the excessive modesty of Addison's nature we must ascribe another fault which generally arises from a very different cause. He became a little too fond of seeing himself surrounded by a small circle of admirers, to whom he was as a king, or rather as a god. All these men were far inferior to him in ability, and some of them had very serious faults. Nor did those faults escape his observation; for, if ever there was an eye which saw through and through men, it was the eye of Addison. But with the keenest observation, and the

finest sense of the ridiculous, he had a large charity. The feeling with which he looked on most of his humble companions was one of benevolence, slightly tinctured with contempt. He was  
 5 at perfect ease in their company; he was grateful for their devoted attachment; and he loaded them with benefits. Their veneration for him appears to have exceeded that with which Johnson was regarded by Boswell, or Warburton by Hurd. It  
 10 was not in the power of adulation to turn such a head, or deprave such a heart, as Addison's. But it must in candor be admitted that he contracted some of the faults which can scarcely be avoided by any person who is so unfortunate as to be the  
 15 oracle of a small literary coterie.

One member of this little society was Eustace Budgell, a young Templar of some literature, and a distant relation of Addison. There was at this time no stain on the character of Budgell, and it is  
 20 not improbable that his career would have been prosperous and honorable, if the life of his cousin had been prolonged. But, when the master was laid in the grave, the disciple broke loose from all restraint, descended rapidly from one degree of  
 25 vice and misery to another, ruined his fortune by follies, attempted to repair it by crimes, and at length closed a wicked and unhappy life by self-murder. Yet, to the last, the wretched man, gambler, lampooner, cheat, forger, as he was,  
 30 retained his affection and veneration for Addison,

and recorded those feelings in the last lines which he traced before he hid himself from infamy under London Bridge.

Another of Addison's favorite companions was Ambrose Philips, a good Whig and a middling poet, who had the honor of bringing into fashion a species of composition which has been called, after his name, Namby Pamby. But the most remarkable members of the little senate, as Pope long afterwards called it, were Richard Steele and Thomas Tickell.

Steele had known Addison from childhood. They had been together at the Charter House and at Oxford; but circumstances had then, for a time, separated them widely. Steele had left college without taking a degree, had been disinherited by a rich relation, had led a vagrant life, had served in the army, had tried to find the philosopher's stone, and had written a religious treatise and several comedies. He was one of those people whom it is impossible either to hate or to respect. His temper was sweet, his affections warm, his spirits lively, his passions strong, and his principles weak. His life was spent in sinning and repenting; in inculcating what was right, and doing what was wrong. In speculation, he was a man of piety and honor; in practice he was much of the rake and a little of the swindler. He was, however, so good-natured that it was not easy to be seriously angry with him, and that even rigid

moralists felt more inclined to pity than to blame him, when he dived himself into a spunging-house or drank himself into a fever. Addison regarded Steele with kindness not unmingled with scorn, 5 tried, with little success, to keep him out of scrapes, introduced him to the great, procured a good place for him, corrected his plays, and, though by no means rich, lent him large sums of money. One of these loans appears, from a letter 10 dated in August, 1708, to have amounted to a thousand pounds. These pecuniary transactions probably led to frequent bickerings. It is said that, on one occasion, Steele's negligence, or dishonesty, provoked Addison to repay himself by the 15 help of a bailiff. We cannot join with Miss Aikin in rejecting this story. Johnson heard it from Savage, who heard it from Steele. Few private transactions which took place a hundred and twenty years ago, are proved by stronger evidence 20 than this. But we can by no means agree with those who condemn Addison's severity. The most amiable of mankind may well be moved to indignation, when what he has earned hardly, and lent with great inconvenience to himself, for the purpose of relieving a friend in distress, is squandered 25 with insane profusion. We will illustrate our meaning by an example which is not the less striking because it is taken from fiction. Dr. Harrison, in Fielding's *Amelia*, is represented as 30 the most benevolent of human beings; yet he



takes in execution, not only the goods, but the person of his friend Booth. Dr. Harrison resorts to this strong measure because he has been informed that Booth, while pleading poverty as an excuse for not paying just debts, has been buying fine jewellery, and setting up a coach. No person who is well acquainted with Steele's life and correspondence can doubt that he behaved quite as ill to Addison as Booth was accused of behaving to Dr. Harrison. The real history, we have little doubt, was something like this:—A letter comes to Addison, imploring help in pathetic terms, and promising reformation and speedy repayment. Poor Dick declares that he has not an inch of candle, or a bushel of coals, or credit with the butcher for a shoulder of mutton. Addison is moved. He determines to deny himself some medals which are wanting to his series of the Twelve Cæsars; to put off buying the new edition of Bayle's Dictionary; and to wear his old sword and buckles another year. In this way he manages to send a hundred pounds to his friend. The next day he calls on Steele, and finds scores of gentlemen and ladies assembled. The fiddles are playing. The table is groaning under champagne, burgundy, and pyramids of sweetmeats. Is it strange that a man whose kindness is thus abused, should send sheriff's officers to reclaim what is due to him?

Tickell was a young man, fresh from Oxford,



who had introduced himself to public notice by writing a most ingenious and graceful little poem in praise of the opera of Rosamond. He deserved, and at length attained, the first place in Addison's friendship. For a time Steele and Tickell were on good terms. But they loved Addison too much to love each other, and at length became as bitter enemies as the rival bulls in Virgil.

At the close of 1708 Wharton became Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, and appointed Addison Chief Secretary. Addison was consequently under the necessity of quitting London for Dublin. Besides the chief secretaryship, which was then worth about two thousand pounds a year, he obtained a patent appointing him keeper of the Irish Records for life, with a salary of three or four hundred a year. Budgell accompanied his cousin in the capacity of private secretary.

Wharton and Addison had nothing in common but Whiggism. The Lord Lieutenant was not only licentious and corrupt, but was distinguished from other libertines and jobbers by a callous impudence which presented the strongest contrast to the Secretary's gentleness and delicacy. Many parts of the Irish administration at this time appear to have deserved serious blame. But against Addison there was not a murmur. He long afterwards asserted, what all the evidence which we have ever seen tends to prove, that his diligence and integrity gained the friend-

ship of all the most considerable persons in Ireland.

The parliamentary career of Addison in Ireland has, we think, wholly escaped the notice of all his biographers. He was elected member for the borough of Cavan in the summer of 1709; and in the journals of two sessions his name frequently occurs. Some of the entries appear to indicate that he so far overcame his timidity as to make speeches. Nor is this by any means improbable; for the Irish House of Commons was a far less formidable audience than the English House; and many tongues which were tied by fear in the greater assembly became fluent in the smaller. Gerard Hamilton, for example, who, from fear of losing the fame gained by his single speech, sat mute at Westminster during forty years, spoke with great effect at Dublin when he was secretary to Lord Halifax.

While Addison was in Ireland, an event occurred to which he owes his high and permanent rank among British writers. As yet his fame rested on performances which, though highly respectable, were not built for duration, and which would, if he had produced nothing else, have now been almost forgotten; on some excellent Latin verses; on some English verses which occasionally rose above mediocrity; and on a book of travels, agreeably written, but not indicating any extraordinary powers of mind. These works showed him to be a

man of taste, sense, and learning. The time had come when he was to prove himself a man of genius, and to enrich our literature with compositions which will live as long as the English language.

In the spring of 1709 Steele formed a literary project, of which he was far indeed from foreseeing the consequences. Periodical papers had during many years been published in London. Most of these were political; but in some of them questions of morality, taste, and love-casuistry had been discussed. The literary merit of these works was small indeed; and even their names are now known only to the curious.

Steele had been appointed Gazetteer by Sunderland, at the request, it is said, of Addison, and thus had access to foreign intelligence earlier and more authentic than was in those times within the reach of an ordinary news-writer. This circumstance seems to have suggested to him the scheme of publishing a periodical paper on a new plan. It was to appear on the days on which the post left London for the country, which were, in that generation, the Tuesdays, Thursdays, and Saturdays. It was to contain the foreign news, accounts of theatrical representations, and the literary gossip of Will's and of the Grecian. It was also to contain remarks on the fashionable topics of the day, compliments to beauties, pasquinades on noted sharpers, and criticisms on popular preachers.

The aim of Steele does not appear to have been at first higher than this. He was not ill-qualified to conduct the work which he had planned. His public intelligence he drew from the best sources. He knew the town, and had paid dear for his knowledge. He had read much more than the dissipated men of that time were in the habit of reading. He was a rake among scholars, and a scholar among rakes. His style was easy and not incorrect; and though his wit and humor were of no high order, his gay animal spirits imparted to his compositions an air of vivacity which ordinary readers could hardly distinguish from comic genius. His writings have been well compared to those light wines which, though deficient in body and flavor, are yet a pleasant small drink, if not kept too long, or carried too far.

Isaac Bickerstaff, Esquire, Astrologer, was an imaginary person, almost as well known in that age as Mr. Paul Pry or Mr. Samuel Pickwick in ours. Swift had assumed the name of Bickerstaff in a satirical pamphlet against Partridge, the maker of almanacs. Partridge had been fool enough to publish a furious reply. Bickerstaff had rejoined in a second pamphlet still more diverting than the first. All the wits had combined to keep up the joke, and the town was long in convulsions of laughter. Steele determined to employ the name which this controversy had made popular; and in April, 1709, it was

announced that Isaac Bickerstaff, Esquire, Astrologer, was about to publish a paper called the *Tatler*.

Addison had not been consulted about this scheme; but as soon as he heard of it he determined to give his assistance. The effect of that assistance cannot be better described than in Steele's own words. "I fared," he said, "like a distressed prince who calls in a powerful neighbor to his aid. I was undone by my auxiliary. When I had once called him in, I could not subsist without dependence on him." "The paper," he says elsewhere, "was advanced indeed. It was raised to a greater thing than I intended it."

It is probable that Addison, when he sent across St. George's Channel his first contributions to the *Tatler*, had no notion of the extent and variety of his own powers. He was the possessor of a vast mine, rich with a hundred ores. But he had been acquainted only with the least precious part of his treasures, and had hitherto contented himself with producing sometimes copper and sometimes lead, intermingled with a little silver. All at once, and by mere accident, he had lighted on an inexhaustible vein of the finest gold.

The mere choice and arrangement of his words would have sufficed to make his essays classical. For never, not even by Dryden, not even by Temple, had the English language been written with such sweetness, grace, and facility. But this was the smallest part of Addison's praise. Had he clothed

his thoughts in the half French style of Horace Walpole, or in the half Latin style of Dr. Johnson, or in the half German jargon of the present day, his genius would have triumphed over all faults of manner. As a moral satirist he stands unrivalled. If ever the best *Tatlers* and *Spectators* were equalled in their own kind, we should be inclined to guess that it must have been by the lost comedies of Menander.

In wit, properly so called, Addison was not inferior to Cowley or Butler. No single ode of Cowley contains so many happy analogies as are crowded into the lines to Sir Godfrey Kneller; and we would undertake to collect from the *Spectators* as great a number of ingenious illustrations as can be found in *Hudibras*. The still higher faculty of invention Addison possessed in still larger measure. The numerous fictions, generally original, often wild and grotesque, but always singularly graceful and happy, which are found in his essays, fully entitle him to the rank of a great poet, a rank to which his metrical compositions give him no claim. As an observer of life, of manners, of all the shades of human character, he stands in the first class. And what he observed he had the art of communicating in two widely different ways. He could describe virtues, vices, habits, whims as well as Clarendon. But he could do something better. He could call human beings into existence, and make them exhibit themselves. If we

wish to find anything more vivid than Addison's best portraits, we must go either to Shakespeare or to Cervantes.

But what shall we say of Addison's humor, of his sense of the ludicrous, of his power of awakening that sense in others, and of drawing mirth from incidents which occur every day, and from little peculiarities of temper and manner, such as may be found in every man? We feel the charm: we give ourselves up to it; but we strive in vain to analyze it.

Perhaps the best way of describing Addison's peculiar pleasantry is to compare it with the pleasantry of some other great satirists. The three most eminent masters of the art of ridicule during the eighteenth century, were, we conceive, Addison, Swift, and Voltaire. Which of the three had the greatest power of moving laughter may be questioned. But each of them, within his own domain, was supreme.

Voltaire is the prince of buffoons. His merriment is without disguise or restraint. He gambols; he grins; he shakes his sides; he points the finger; he turns up the nose; he shoots out the tongue. The manner of Swift is the very opposite to this. He moves laughter, but never joins in it. He appears in his works such as he appeared in society. All the company are convulsed with merriment, while the Dean, the author of all the mirth, preserves an invincible gravity, and even

sourness of aspect, and gives utterance to the most eccentric and ludicrous fancies, with the air of a man reading the commination service.

The manner of Addison is as remote from that of Swift as from that of Voltaire. He neither laughs out like the French wit, nor, like the Irish wit, throws a double portion of severity into his countenance while laughing inwardly; but preserves a look peculiarly his own, a look of demure serenity, disturbed only by an arch sparkle of the eye, an almost imperceptible elevation of the brow, an almost imperceptible curl of the lip. His tone is never that either of a Jack Pudding or of a cynic. It is that of a gentleman, in whom the quickest sense of the ridiculous is constantly tempered by good nature and good breeding.

We own that the humor of Addison is, in our opinion, of a more delicious flavor than the humor of either Swift or Voltaire. Thus much, at least, is certain, that both Swift and Voltaire have been successfully mimicked, and that no man has yet been able to mimic Addison. The letter of the Abbé Coyer to Pansophe is Voltaire all over, and imposed, during a long time, on the Academicians of Paris. There are passages in Arbuthnot's satirical works which we, at least, cannot distinguish from Swift's best writing. But of the many eminent men who have made Addison their model, though several have copied his mere diction with happy effect, none have been able to catch



the tone of his pleasantry. In the *World*, in the *Connoisseur*, in the *Mirror*, in the *Lounger*, there are numerous papers written in obvious imitation of his *Tatlers* and *Spectators*. Most of these papers have some merit; many are very lively and amusing; but there is not a single one which could be passed off as Addison's on a critic of the smallest perspicacity.

But that which chiefly distinguishes Addison from Swift, from Voltaire, from almost all the other great masters of ridicule, is the grace, the nobleness, the moral purity, which we find even in his merriment. Severity, gradually hardening and darkening into misanthropy, characterizes the works of Swift. The nature of Voltaire was, indeed, not inhuman; but he venerated nothing. Neither in the masterpieces of art nor in the purest examples of virtue, neither in the Great First Cause nor in the awful enigma of the grave, could he see anything but subjects for drollery. The more solemn and august the theme, the more monkey-like was his grimacing and chattering. The mirth of Swift is the mirth of Mephistopheles; the mirth of Voltaire is the mirth of Puck. If, as Soame Jenyns oddly imagined, a portion of the happiness of seraphim and just men made perfect be derived from an exquisite perception of the ludicrous, their mirth must surely be none other than the mirth of Addison; a mirth consistent with tender compassion for all that is frail, and

with profound reverence for all that is sublime. Nothing great, nothing amiable, no moral duty, no doctrine of natural or revealed religion, has ever been associated by Addison with any degrading idea. His humanity is without a parallel in literary history. The highest proof of virtue is to possess boundless power without abusing it. No kind of power is more formidable than the power of making men ridiculous; and that power Addison possessed in boundless measure. How grossly that power was abused by Swift and by Voltaire is well known. But of Addison it may be confidently affirmed that he has blackened no man's character, nay, that it would be difficult, if not impossible, to find in all the volumes which he has left us a single taunt which can be called ungenerous or unkind. Yet he had detractors, whose malignity might have seemed to justify as terrible a revenge as that which men, not superior to him in genius, wreaked on Bettesworth and on Franc de Pompignan. He was a politician; he was the best writer of his party; he lived in times of fierce excitement, in times when persons of high character and station stooped to scurrility such as is now practised only by the basest of mankind. Yet no provocation and no example could induce him to return railing for railing.

Of the service which his Essays rendered to morality it is difficult to speak too highly. It is true, that, when the *Tatler* appeared, that age of

outrageous profaneness and licentiousness which followed the Restoration had passed away. Jeremy Collier had shamed the theatres into something which, compared with the excesses of Ether-  
 5 ege and Wycherley, might be called decency. Yet there still lingered in the public mind a pernicious notion that there was some connection between genius and profligacy; between the domestic virtues and the sullen formality of the Puritans.  
 10 That error it is the glory of Addison to have dispelled. He taught the nation that the faith and the morality of Hale and Tillotson might be found in company with wit more sparkling than the wit of Congreve, and with humor richer than the  
 15 humor of Vanbrugh. So effectually, indeed, did he retort on vice the mockery which had recently been directed against virtue, that, since his time, the open violation of decency has always been considered among us as the mark of a fool. And this  
 20 revolution, the greatest and most salutary ever effected by any satirist, he accomplished, be it remembered, without writing one personal lampoon.

In the early contributions of Addison to the  
 25 *Tatler*, his peculiar powers were not fully exhibited. Yet from the first, his superiority to all his coadjutors was evident. Some of his later *Tatlers* are fully equal to anything that he ever wrote. Among the portraits, we most admire  
 30 Tom Folio, Ned Softly, and the Political Uphol-

sterer. The proceedings of the Court of Honor, the Thermometer of Zeal, the story of the Frozen Words, the Memoirs of the Shilling, are excellent specimens of that ingenious and lively species of fiction in which Addison excelled all men. There is one still better paper of the same class. But though that paper, a hundred and thirty-three years ago, was probably thought as edifying as one of Smalridge's sermons, we dare not indicate it to the squeamish readers of the nineteenth century. 5 10

During the session of Parliament which commenced in November, 1709, and which the impeachment of Sacheverell has made memorable, Addison appears to have resided in London. The *Tatler* was now more popular than any periodical paper had ever been; and his connection with it was generally known. It was not known, however, that almost everything good in the *Tatler* was his. The truth is, that the fifty or sixty numbers which we owe to him were not merely the best, but so decidedly the best that any five of them are more valuable than all the two hundred numbers in which he had no share. 15 20

He required, at this time, all the solace which he could derive from literary success. The Queen had always disliked the Whigs. She had during some years disliked the Marlborough family. But, reigning by a disputed title, she could not venture directly to oppose herself to a majority of both Houses of Parliament; and, engaged as she was in 25 30

a war on the event of which her own crown was staked, she could not venture to disgrace a great and successful general. But at length, in the year 1710, the causes which had restrained her from  
5 showing her aversion to the Low Church party ceased to operate. The trial of Sacheverell produced an outbreak of public feeling scarcely less violent than the outbreaks which we can ourselves remember in 1820, and in 1831. The country  
10 gentlemen, the country clergymen, the rabble of the towns, were all, for once, on the same side. It was clear that, if a general election took place before the excitement abated, the Tories would have a majority. The services of Marlborough  
15 had been so splendid that they were no longer necessary. The Queen's throne was secure from all attack on the part of Louis. Indeed, it seemed much more likely that the English and German armies would divide the spoils of Versailles and  
20 Marli than that a Marshal of France would bring back the Pretender to St. James's. The Queen, acting by the advice of Harley, determined to dismiss her servants. In June the change commenced. Sunderland was the first who fell. The  
25 Tories exulted over his fall. The Whigs tried, during a few weeks, to persuade themselves that her majesty had acted only from personal dislike to the Secretary, and that she meditated no further alteration. But, early in August, Godolphin was  
30 surprised by a letter from Anne, which directed

him to break his white staff. Even after this event, the irresolution or dissimulation of Harley kept up the hopes of the Whigs during another month; and then the ruin became rapid and violent. The Parliament was dissolved. The ministers were turned out. The Tories were called to office. The tide of popularity ran violently in favor of the High Church party. That party, feeble in the late House of Commons, was now irresistible. The power which the Tories had thus suddenly acquired, they used with blind and stupid ferocity. The howl which the whole pack set up for prey and for blood appalled even him who had roused and unchained them. When, at this distance of time, we calmly review the conduct of the discarded ministers, we cannot but feel a movement of indignation at the injustice with which they were treated. No body of men had ever administered the government with more energy, ability, and moderation; and their success had been proportioned to their wisdom. They had saved Holland and Germany. They had humbled France. They had, as it seemed, all but torn Spain from the house of Bourbon. They had made England the first power in Europe. At home they had united England and Scotland. They had respected the rights of conscience and the liberty of the subject. They retired, leaving their country at the height of prosperity and glory. And yet they were pursued to their retreat

by such a roar of obloquy as was never raised against the government which threw away thirteen colonies, or against the government which sent a gallant army to perish in the ditches of Walcheren.

5 None of the Whigs suffered more in the general wreck than Addison. He had just sustained some heavy pecuniary losses, of the nature of which we are imperfectly informed, when his secretaryship was taken from him. He had reason to believe  
10 that he should also be deprived of the small Irish office which he held by patent. He had just resigned his fellowship. It seems probable that he had already ventured to raise his eyes to a great lady, and that, while his political friends were in  
15 power, and while his own fortunes were rising, he had been, in the phrase of the romances which were then fashionable, permitted to hope. But Mr. Addison the ingenious writer, and Mr. Addison the chief secretary, were, in her ladyship's  
20 opinion, two very different persons. All these calamities united, however, could not disturb the serene cheerfulness of a mind conscious of innocence, and rich in its own wealth. He told his friends, with smiling resignation, that they ought  
25 to admire his philosophy; that he had lost at once his fortune, his place, his fellowship, and his mistress; that he must think of turning tutor again; and yet that his spirits were as good as ever.

He had one consolation. Of the unpopularity  
30 which his friends had incurred, he had no share.

Such was the esteem with which he was regarded that, while the most violent measures were taken for the purpose of forcing Tory members on Whig corporations, he was returned to Parliament without even a contest. Swift, who was now in London, and who had already determined on quitting the Whigs, wrote to Stella in these remarkable words: "The Tories carry it among the new members six to one. Mr. Addison's election has passed easy and undisputed; and I believe if he had a mind to be king he would hardly be refused."

The good will with which the Tories regarded Addison is the more honorable to him, because it had not been purchased by any concession on his part. During the general election he published a political journal, entitled the *Whig Examiner*. Of that journal it may be sufficient to say that Johnson, in spite of his strong political prejudices, pronounced it to be superior in wit to any of Swift's writings on the other side. When it ceased to appear, Swift, in a letter to Stella, expressed his exultation at the death of so formidable an antagonist. "He might well rejoice," says Johnson, "at the death of that which he could not have killed." "On no occasion," he adds, "was the genius of Addison more vigorously exerted, and on none did the superiority of his powers more evidently appear."

The only use which Addison appears to have



made of the favor with which he was regarded by the Tories was to save some of his friends from the general ruin of the Whig party. He felt himself to be in a situation which made it his duty to take a decided part in politics. But the case of Steele and of Ambrose Philips was different. For Philips, Addison even condescended to solicit, with what success we have not ascertained. Steele held two places. He was Gazetteer, and he was also a Commissioner of Stamps. The Gazette was taken from him. But he was suffered to retain his place in the Stamp Office, on an implied understanding that he should not be active against the new government; and he was, during more than two years, induced by Addison to observe this armistice with tolerable fidelity.

Isaac Bickerstaff accordingly became silent upon politics, and the article of news which had once formed about one-third of his paper, altogether disappeared. The *Tatler* had completely changed its character. It was now nothing but a series of essays on books, morals, and manners. Steele therefore resolved to bring it to a close, and to commence a new work on an improved plan. It was announced that this new work would be published daily. The undertaking was generally regarded as bold, or rather rash; but the event amply justified the confidence with which Steele relied on the fertility of Addison's genius. On the second of January, 1711, appeared the last

*Tatler*. At the beginning of March following appeared the first of an incomparable series of papers, containing observations on life and literature by an imaginary spectator.

The Spectator himself was conceived and drawn by Addison; and it is not easy to doubt that the portrait was meant to be in some features a likeness of the painter. The Spectator is a gentleman who, after passing a studious youth at the university, has travelled on classic ground, and has bestowed much attention on curious points of antiquity. He has, on his return, fixed his residence in London, and has observed all the forms of life which are to be found in that great city; has daily listened to the wits of Will's, has smoked with the philosophers of the Grecian, and has mingled with the parsons at Child's, and with the politicians at the St. James's. In the morning, he often listens to the hum of the Exchange; in the evening, his face is constantly to be seen in the pit of Drury Lane Theatre. But an insurmountable bashfulness prevents him from opening his mouth except in a small circle of intimate friends.

These friends were first sketched by Steele. Four of the club, the templar, the clergyman, the soldier, and the merchant, were uninteresting figures, fit only for a background. But the other two, an old country baronet and an old town rake, though not delineated with a very delicate pencil, had some good strokes. Addison took the rude

outlines into his own hands, retouched them, colored them, and is in truth the creator of the Sir Roger de Coverley and the Will Honeycomb with whom we are all familiar.

5 The plan of the Spectator must be allowed to be both original and eminently happy. Every valuable essay in the series may be read with pleasure separately; yet the five or six hundred essays form a whole, and a whole which has the interest of a  
 10 novel. It must be remembered, too, that at that time no novel, giving a lively and powerful picture of the common life and manners of England, had appeared. Richardson was working as a compositor. Fielding was robbing birds' nests. Smollett  
 15 was not yet born. The narrative, therefore, which connects together the Spectator's essays, gave to our ancestors their first taste of an exquisite and untried pleasure. That narrative was indeed constructed with no art or labor. The events were  
 20 such events as occur every day. Sir Roger comes up to town to see Eugenio, as the worthy baronet always calls Prince Eugene, goes with the Spectator on the water to Spring Gardens, walks among the tombs in the Abbey, and is frightened by the  
 25 Mohawks, but conquers his apprehension so far as to go to the theatre when the Distressed Mother is acted. The Spectator pays a visit in the summer to Coverley Hall, is charmed with the old house, the old butler, and the old chaplain, eats a jack  
 30 caught by Will Wimble, rides to the assizes, and

hears a point of law discussed by Tom Touchy. At last a letter from the honest butler brings to the club the news that Sir Roger is dead. Will Honeycomb marries and reforms at sixty. The club breaks up; and the Spectator resigns his functions. Such events can hardly be said to form a plot; yet they are related with such truth, such grace, such wit, such humor, such pathos, such knowledge of the human heart, such knowledge of the ways of the world, that they charm us on the hundredth perusal. We have not the least doubt that if Addison had written a novel, on an extensive plan, it would have been superior to any that we possess. As it is, he is entitled to be considered not only as the greatest of the English essayists, but as the forerunner of the great English novelists.

We say this of Addison alone; for Addison is the Spectator. About three-sevenths of the work are his; and it is no exaggeration to say, that his worst essay is as good as the best essay of any of his coadjutors. His best essays approach near to absolute perfection; nor is their excellence more wonderful than their variety. His invention never seems to flag; nor is he ever under the necessity of repeating himself, or of wearing out a subject. There are no dregs in his wine. He regales us after the fashion of that prodigal nabob who held that there was only one good glass in a bottle. As soon as we have tasted the first sparkling foam of

a jest, it is withdrawn, and a fresh draught of nectar is at our lips. On the Monday, we have an allegory as lively and ingenious as Lucian's Auction of Lives; on the Tuesday, an Eastern apologue as richly colored as the Tales of Scheherezade; on the Wednesday, a character described with the skill of La Bruyère; on the Thursday, a scene from common life, equal to the best chapters in the Vicar of Wakefield; on the Friday, some sly Horatian pleasantry on fashionable follies,—on hoops, patches, or puppet-shows; and on the Saturday, a religious meditation, which will bear a comparison with the finest passages in Massillon.

It is dangerous to select where there is so much that deserves the highest praise. We will venture, however, to say, that any person who wishes to form a just notion of the extent and variety of Addison's powers, will do well to read at one sitting the following papers: The two Visits to the Abbey, the visit to the Exchange, the Journal of the Retired Citizen, the Vision of Mirza, the Transmigrations of Pug the Monkey, and the Death of Sir Roger de Coverley.

The least valuable of Addison's contributions to the *Spectator* are, in the judgment of our age, his critical papers. Yet his critical papers are always luminous, and often ingenious. The very worst of them must be regarded as creditable to him, when the character of the school in which he had been trained is fairly considered. The best of

them were much too good for his readers. In truth, he was not so far behind our generation as he was before his own. No essays in the *Spectator* were more censured and derided than those in which he raised his voice against the contempt with which our fine old ballads were regarded, and showed the scoffers that the same gold which, burnished and polished, gives lustre to the *Æneid* and the Odes of Horace, is mingled with the rude dross of Chevy Chase.

It is not strange that the success of the *Spectator* should have been such as no similar work has ever obtained. The number of copies daily distributed was at first three thousand. It subsequently increased, and had risen to near four thousand when the stamp tax was imposed. That tax was fatal to a crowd of journals. The *Spectator*, however, stood its ground, doubled its price, and, though its circulation fell off, still yielded a large revenue both to the state and to the authors. For particular papers, the demand was immense; of some, it is said, twenty thousand copies were required. But this was not all. To have the *Spectator* served up every morning with the bohea and rolls was a luxury for the few. The majority were content to wait till essays enough had appeared to form a volume. Ten thousand copies of each volume were immediately taken off, and new editions were called for. It must be remembered, that the population of England was then

hardly a third of what it now is. The number of Englishmen who were in the habit of reading, was probably not a sixth of what it now is. A shop-keeper or a farmer who found any pleasure in literature, was a rarity. Nay, there was doubtless more than one knight of the shire whose country seat did not contain ten books, receipt-books and books on farriery included. In these circumstances, the sale of the *Spectator* must be considered as indicating a popularity quite as great as that of the most successful works of Sir Walter Scott and Mr. Dickens in our own time.

At the close of 1712 the *Spectator* ceased to appear. It was probably felt that the shortfaced gentleman and his club had been long enough before the town; and that it was time to withdraw them, and to replace them by a new set of characters. In a few weeks the first number of the *Guardian* was published. But the *Guardian* was unfortunate both in its birth and in its death. It began in dulness and disappeared in a tempest of faction. The original plan was bad. Addison contributed nothing till sixty-six numbers had appeared; and it was then impossible to make the *Guardian* what the *Spectator* had been. Nestor Ironside and the Miss Lizards were people to whom even he could impart no interest. He could only furnish some excellent little essays, both serious and comic; and this he did.

Why Addison gave no assistance to the *Guard-*

*ian* during the first two months of its existence, is a question which has puzzled the editors and biographers, but which seems to us to admit of a very easy solution. He was then engaged in bringing his *Cato* on the stage.

The first four acts of this drama had been lying in his desk since his return from Italy. His modest and sensitive nature shrank from the risk of a public and shameful failure; and, though all who saw the manuscript were loud in praise, some thought it possible that an audience might become impatient even of very good rhetoric, and advised Addison to print the play without hazarding a representation. At length, after many fits of apprehension, the poet yielded to the urgency of his political friends, who hoped that the public would discover some analogy between the followers of Cæsar and the Tories, between Sempronius and the apostate Whigs, between Cato, struggling to the last for the liberties of Rome, and the band of patriots who still stood firm round Halifax and Wharton.

Addison gave the play to the managers of Drury Lane Theatre, without stipulating for any advantage to himself. They, therefore, thought themselves bound to spare no cost in scenery and dresses. The decorations, it is true, would not have pleased the skilful eye of Mr. Macready. Juba's waistcoat blazed with gold lace; Marcia's hoop was worthy of a duchess on the birthday; and



Cato wore a wig worth fifty guineas. The prologue was written by Pope, and is undoubtedly a dignified and spirited composition. The part of the hero was excellently played by Booth. Steele  
 5 undertook to pack a house. The boxes were in a blaze with the stars of the Peers in Opposition. The pit was crowded with attentive and friendly listeners from the Inns of Court and the literary coffee-houses. Sir Gilbert Heathcote, Governor of  
 10 the Bank of England, was at the head of a powerful body of auxiliaries from the city, warm men and true Whigs, but better known at Jonathan's and Garraway's than in the haunts of wits and critics.

15 These precautions were quite superfluous. The Tories, as a body, regarded Addison with no unkind feelings. Nor was it for their interest, professing, as they did, profound reverence for law and prescription, and abhorrence both of popular  
 20 insurrections and of standing armies, to appropriate to themselves reflections thrown on the great military chief and demagogue, who, with the support of the legions and of the common people, subverted all the ancient institutions of his country. Accordingly, every shout that was raised by  
 25 the members of the Kit Cat was echoed by the High Churchmen of the October; and the curtain at length fell amidst thunders of unanimous applause.

30 The delight and admiration of the town were

described by the *Guardian* in terms which we might attribute to partiality, were it not that the *Examiner*, the organ of the ministry, held similar language. The Tories, indeed, found much to sneer at in the conduct of their opponents. 5 Steele had on this, as on other occasions, shown more zeal than taste or judgment. The honest citizens who marched under the orders of Sir Gibby, as he was facetiously called, probably knew better when to buy and when to sell stock than 10 when to clap and when to hiss at a play, and incurred some ridicule by making the hypocritical Sempronius their favorite, and by giving to his insincere rants louder plaudits than they bestowed on the temperate eloquence of Cato. Wharton, 15 too, who had the incredible effrontery to applaud the lines about flying from prosperous vice and from the power of impious men to a private station, did not escape the sarcasms of those who justly thought that he could fly from nothing more 20 vicious or impious than himself. The epilogue, which was written by Garth, a zealous Whig, was severely and not unreasonably censured as ignoble and out of place. But Addison was described, even by the bitterest Tory writers, as a gentleman 25 of wit and virtue, in whose friendship many persons of both parties were happy, and whose name ought not to be mixed up with factious squabbles.

Of the jests by which the triumph of the Whig party was disturbed, the most severe and happy 30

was Bolingbroke's. Between two acts he sent for Booth to his box, and presented him, before the whole theatre, with a purse of fifty guineas for defending the cause of liberty so well against a  
 5 perpetual Dictator. This was a pungent allusion to the attempt which Marlborough had made, not long before his fall, to obtain a patent creating him Captain General for life.

It was April; and in April, a hundred and  
 10 thirty years ago, the London season was thought to be far advanced. During a whole month, however, Cato was performed to overflowing houses, and brought into the treasury of the theatre twice the gains of an ordinary spring. In the summer  
 15 the Drury Lane company went down to the Act at Oxford, and there, before an audience which retained an affectionate remembrance of Addison's accomplishments and virtues, his tragedy was enacted during several days. The gowmsmen  
 20 began to besiege the theatre in the forenoon, and by one in the afternoon all the seats were filled.

About the merits of the piece which had so extraordinary an effect, the public, we suppose, has made up its mind. To compare it with the  
 25 masterpieces of the Attic stage, with the great English dramas of the time of Elizabeth, or even with the productions of Schiller's manhood, would be absurd indeed; yet it contains excellent dialogue and declamation, and, among plays fashioned  
 30 on the French model, must be allowed to rank

high,—not indeed with *Athalie* or *Saul*, but, we think, not below *Cinna*, and certainly above any other English tragedy of the same school; above many of the plays of *Corneille*; above many of the plays of *Voltaire* and *Alfieri*; and above some plays of *Racine*. Be this as it may, we have little doubt that *Cato* did as much as the *Tatlers*, *Spectators*, and *Freeholders* united, to raise Addison's fame among his contemporaries.

The modesty and good nature of the successful dramatist had tamed even the malignity of faction. But literary envy, it should seem, is a fiercer passion than party spirit. It was by a zealous Whig that the fiercest attack on the Whig tragedy was made. John Dennis published *Remarks on Cato*, which were written with some acuteness and with much coarseness and asperity. Addison neither defended himself nor retaliated. On many points he had an excellent defence, and nothing would have been easier than to retaliate; for Dennis had written bad odes, bad tragedies, bad comedies: he had, moreover, a larger share than most men of those infirmities and eccentricities which excite laughter; and Addison's power of turning either an absurd book or an absurd man into ridicule was unrivalled. Addison, however, serenely conscious of his superiority, looked with pity on his assailant, whose temper, naturally irritable and gloomy, had been soured by want, by controversy, and by literary failures.

But among the young candidates for Addison's favor there was one distinguished by talents from the rest, and distinguished, we fear, not less by malignity and insincerity. Pope was only twenty-five. But his powers had expanded to their full maturity; and his best poem, the Rape of the Lock, had recently been published. Of his genius Addison had always expressed high admiration. But Addison had early discerned, what might, indeed, have been discerned by an eye less penetrating than his, that the diminutive, crooked, sickly boy was eager to revenge himself on society for the unkindness of nature. In the *Spectator* the Essay on Criticism had been praised with cordial warmth; but a gentle hint had been added that the writer of so excellent a poem would have done well to avoid ill-natured personalities. Pope, though evidently more galled by the censure than gratified by the praise, returned thanks for the admonition, and promised to profit by it. The two writers continued to exchange civilities, counsel, and small good offices. Addison publicly extolled Pope's miscellaneous pieces, and Pope furnished Addison with a prologue. This did not last long. Pope hated Dennis, whom he had injured without provocation. The appearance of the Remarks on Cato gave the irritable poet an opportunity of venting his malice under the show of friendship; and such an opportunity could not but be welcome to a nature which was implacable

in enmity, and which always preferred the tortuous to the straight path. He published, accordingly, the Narrative of the Frenzy of John Dennis. But Pope had mistaken his powers. He was a great master of invective and sarcasm; he could dissect a character in terse and sonorous couplets, brilliant with antithesis; but of dramatic talent he was altogether destitute. If he had written a lampoon on Dennis, such as that on Atticus or that on Sporus, the old grumbler would have been crushed. But Pope writing dialogue resembled—to borrow Horace's imagery and his own—a wolf, which, instead of biting, should take to kicking, or a monkey which should try to sting. The Narrative is utterly contemptible. Of argument there is not even the show, and the jests are such as, if they were introduced into a farce, would call forth the hisses of the shilling gallery. Dennis raves about the drama, and the nurse thinks that he is calling for a dram. "There is," he cries, "no peripetia in the tragedy, no change of fortune, no change at all." "Pray, good sir, be not angry," says the old woman, "I'll fetch change." This is not exactly the pleasantry of Addison.

There can be no doubt that Addison saw through this officious zeal, and felt himself deeply aggrieved by it. So foolish and spiteful a pamphlet could do him no good, and, if he were thought to have any hand in it, must do him harm. Gifted with incomparable powers of ridicule, he had never,

even in self-defence, used those powers inhumanly or uncourteously; and he was not disposed to let others make his fame and his interests a pretext under which they might commit outrages from  
 5 which he had himself constantly abstained. He accordingly declared that he had no concern in the Narrative, that he disapproved of it, and that if he answered the Remarks, he would answer them like a gentleman; and he took care to communi-  
 10 cate this to Dennis. Pope was bitterly mortified, and to this transaction we are inclined to ascribe the hatred with which he ever after regarded Addison.

In September, 1713, the *Guardian* ceased to appear. Steele had gone mad about politics. A  
 15 general election had just taken place: he had been chosen member for Stockbridge, and he fully expected to play a first part in Parliament. The immense success of the *Tatler* and *Spectator* had turned his head. He had been the editor of both  
 20 those papers, and was not aware how entirely they owed their influence and popularity to the genius of his friend. His spirits, always violent, were now excited by vanity, ambition, and faction, to such a pitch that he every day committed some  
 25 offence against good sense and good taste. All the discreet and moderate members of his own party regretted and condemned his folly. "I am in a thousand troubles," Addison wrote, "about poor Dick, and wish that his zeal for the public may not  
 30 be ruinous to himself. But he has sent me word

that he is determined to go on, and that any advice I may give him in this particular will have no weight with him."

Steele set up a political paper called the *Englishman*, which, as it was not supported by contributions from Addison, completely failed. By this work, by some other writings of the same kind, and by the airs which he gave himself at the first meeting of the new Parliament, he made the Tories so angry that they determined to expel him. The Whigs stood by him gallantly, but were unable to save him. The vote of expulsion was regarded by all dispassionate men as a tyrannical exercise of the power of the majority. But Steele's violence and folly, though they by no means justified the steps which his enemies took, had completely disgusted his friends; nor did he ever regain the place which he had held in the public estimation.

Addison about this time conceived the design of adding an eighth volume to the *Spectator*. In June, 1714, the first number of the new series appeared, and during about six months three papers were published weekly. Nothing can be more striking than the contrast between the *Englishman* and the eighth volume of the *Spectator*, between Steele without Addison and Addison without Steele. The *Englishman* is forgotten: the eighth volume of the *Spectator* contains, perhaps, the finest essays, both serious and playful, in the English language.



Before this volume was completed, the death of Anne produced an entire change in the administration of public affairs. The blow fell suddenly. It found the Tory party distracted by internal  
 5 feuds, and unprepared for any great effort. Harley had just been disgraced. Bolingbroke, it was supposed, would be the chief minister. But the Queen was on her death-bed before the white staff had been given, and her last public act was to  
 10 deliver it with a feeble hand to the Duke of Shrewsbury. The emergency produced a coalition between all sections of public men who were attached to the Protestant succession. George the First was proclaimed without opposition. A coun-  
 15 cil, in which the leading whigs had seats, took the direction of affairs till the new King should arrive. The first act of the Lords Justices was to appoint Addison their secretary.

There is an idle tradition that he was directed  
 20 to prepare a letter to the King, that he could not satisfy himself as to the style of this composition, and that the Lords Justices called in a clerk, who at once did what was wanted. It is not strange that a story so flattering to mediocrity should be  
 25 popular; and we are sorry to deprive dunces of their consolation. But the truth must be told. It was well observed by Sir James Mackintosh, whose knowledge of these times was unequalled, that Addison never, in any official document,  
 30 affected wit or eloquence, and that his despatches

are, without exception, remarkable for unpretending simplicity. Everybody who knows with what ease Addison's finest essays were produced, must be convinced that, if well-turned phrases had been wanted, he would have had no difficulty in finding them. We are, however, inclined to believe, that the story is not absolutely without a foundation. It may well be that Addison did not know, till he had consulted experienced clerks who remembered the times when William the Third was absent on the Continent, in what form a letter from the Council of Regency to the King ought to be drawn. We think it very likely that the ablest statesmen of our time, Lord John Russell, Sir Robert Peel, Lord Palmerston, for example, would, in similar circumstances, be found quite as ignorant. Every office has some little mysteries which the dullest man may learn with a little attention, and which the greatest man cannot possibly know by intuition. One paper must be signed by the chief of the department; another by his deputy; to a third the royal sign-manual is necessary. One communication is to be registered, and another is not. One sentence must be in black ink, and another in red ink. If the ablest Secretary for Ireland were moved to the India Board, if the ablest President of the India Board were moved to the War Office, he would require instruction on points like these; and we do not doubt that Addison required such instruction when he be-

came, for the first time, Secretary to the Lords Justices.

George the First took possession of his kingdom without opposition. A new ministry was formed, and a new Parliament favorable to the Whigs chosen. Sunderland was appointed Lord Lieutenant of Ireland; and Addison again went to Dublin as Chief Secretary.

At Dublin Swift resided; and there was much speculation about the way in which the Dean and the Secretary would behave towards each other. The relations which existed between these remarkable men form an interesting and pleasing portion of literary history. They had early attached themselves to the same political party and to the same patrons. While Anne's Whig ministry was in power, the visits of Swift to London and the official residence of Addison in Ireland had given them opportunities of knowing each other. They were the two shrewdest observers of their age. But their observations on each other had led them to favorable conclusions. Swift did full justice to the rare powers of conversation which were latent under the bashful deportment of Addison. Addison, on the other hand, discerned much good nature under the severe look and manner of Swift; and, indeed, the Swift of 1708 and the Swift of 1738 were two very different men.

But the paths of the two friends diverged widely. The Whig statesmen loaded Addison

with solid benefits. They praised Swift, asked him to dinner, and did nothing more for him. His profession laid them under a difficulty. In the state they could not promote him; and they had reason to fear that, by bestowing preferment in the church on the author of the Tale of a Tub, they might give scandal to the public, which had no high opinion of their orthodoxy. He did not make fair allowance for the difficulties which prevented Halifax and Somers from serving him, thought himself an ill-used man, sacrificéd honor and consistency to revenge, joined the Tories, and became their most formidable champion. He soon found, however, that his old friends were less to blame than he had supposed. The dislike with which the Queen and the heads of the church regarded him was insurmountable; and it was with the greatest difficulty that he obtained an ecclesiastical dignity of no great value, on condition of fixing his residence in a country which he detested.

Difference of political opinion had produced, not indeed a quarrel, but a coolness between Swift and Addison. They at length ceased altogether to see each other. Yet there was between them a tacit compact like that between the hereditary guests in the Iliad:—

Ἐγχεα δ' ἀλλήλων ἀλεώμεθα καὶ δι' ὀμίλου·  
 Πολλοὶ μὲν γὰρ ἐμοὶ Τρῶες κλειτοὶ τ' ἐπίκουροι,  
 Κτείνειν, ὃν κε θεός γε πόρῃ καὶ ποσσὶ κίχρῳ,  
 Ἴολλοὶ δ' αὐτοὶ Ἀχαιοὶ, ἐναιρέμεν ὃν κε δύνῃαι.

It is not strange that Addison, who calumniated and insulted nobody, should not have calumniated or insulted Swift. But it is remarkable that Swift, to whom neither genius nor virtue was  
 5 sacred, and who generally seemed to find, like most other renegades, a peculiar pleasure in attacking old friends, should have shown so much respect and tenderness to Addison.

Fortune had now changed. The accession of  
 10 the house of Hanover had secured in England the liberties of the people, and in Ireland the dominion of the Protestant caste. To that caste Swift was more odious than any other man. He was hooted and even pelted in the streets of Dublin; and  
 15 could not venture to ride along the strand for his health without the attendance of armed servants. Many whom he had formerly served now libelled and insulted him. At this time Addison arrived. He had been advised not to show the smallest civil-  
 20 ity to the Dean of St. Patrick's. He had answered, with admirable spirit, that it might be necessary for men whose fidelity to their party was suspected, to hold no intercourse with political opponents; but that one who had been a steady  
 25 Whig in the worst times might venture, when the good cause was triumphant, to shake hands with an old friend who was one of the vanquished Tories. His kindness was soothing to the proud and cruelly wounded spirit of Swift; and the two great satirists  
 30 resumed their habits of friendly intercourse.

Those associates of Addison whose political opinions agreed with his shared his good fortune. He took Tickell with him to Ireland. He procured for Budgell a lucrative place in the same kingdom. Ambrose Philips was provided for in England. Steele had injured himself so much by his eccentricity and perverseness, that he obtained but a very small part of what he thought his due. He was, however, knighted; he had a place in the household; and he subsequently received other marks of favor from the court.

Addison did not remain long in Ireland. In 1715 he quitted his secretaryship for a seat at the Board of Trade. In the same year his comedy of the Drummer was brought on the stage. The name of the author was not announced; the piece was coldly received; and some critics have expressed a doubt whether it were really Addison's. To us the evidence, both external and internal, seems decisive. It is not in Addison's best manner; but it contains numerous passages which no other writer known to us could have produced. It was again performed after Addison's death, and, being known to be his, was loudly applauded.

Towards the close of the year 1715, while the Rebellion was still raging in Scotland, Addison published the first number of a paper called the *Freeholder*. Among his political works the *Freeholder* is entitled to the first place. Even in the *Spectator* there are few serious papers nobler than

the character of his friend Lord Somers, and certainly no satirical papers superior to those in which the Tory fox-hunter is introduced. This character is the original of Squire Western, and is drawn  
 5 with all Fielding's force, and with a delicacy of which Fielding was altogether destitute. As none of Addison's works exhibits stronger marks of his genius than the *Freeholder*, so none does more honor to his moral character. It is difficult to  
 10 extol too highly the candor and humanity of a political writer whom even the excitement of civil war cannot hurry into unseemly violence. Oxford, it is well known, was then the stronghold of Toryism. The High Street had been repeatedly lined  
 15 with bayonets in order to keep down the disaffected gownsmen; and traitors pursued by the messengers of the government had been concealed in the garrets of several colleges. Yet the admonition which, even under such circumstances, Addison  
 20 addressed to the university, is singularly gentle, respectful, and even affectionate. Indeed, he could not find it in his heart to deal harshly even with imaginary persons. His fox-hunter, though ignorant, stupid, and violent, is at heart a good  
 25 fellow, and is at last reclaimed by the clemency of the king. Steele was dissatisfied with his friend's moderation, and, though he acknowledged that the *Freeholder* was excellently written, complained that the ministry played on a lute when it was  
 30 necessary to blow the trumpet. He accordingly



determined to execute a flourish after his own fashion, and tried to rouse the public spirit of the nation by means of a paper called the *Town Talk*, which is now as utterly forgotten as his *Englishman*, as his *Crisis*, as his *Letter to the Bailiff of Stockbridge*, as his *Reader*, in short, as everything that he wrote without the help of Addison. 5

In the same year in which the *Drummer* was acted, and in which the first numbers of the *Freeholder* appeared, the estrangement of Pope and Addison became complete. Addison had from the first seen that Pope was false and malevolent. Pope had discovered that Addison was jealous. The discovery was made in a strange manner. Pope had written the *Rape of the Lock*, in two cantos, without supernatural machinery. These two cantos had been loudly applauded, and by none more loudly than by Addison. Then Pope thought of the Sylphs and Gnomes, Ariel, Mometilla, Crispissa, and Umbriel, and resolved to interweave the Rosicrucian mythology with the original fabric. He asked Addison's advice. Addison said that the poem as it stood was a delicious little thing, and entreated Pope not to run the risk of marring what was so excellent in trying to mend it. Pope afterward declared that this insidious counsel first opened his eyes to the baseness of him who gave it. 10 15 20 25

Now there can be no doubt that Pope's plan was most ingenious, and that he afterwards executed it 30



with great skill and success. But does it necessarily follow that Addison's advice was bad? And if Addison's advice was bad, does it necessarily follow that it was given from bad motives? If a  
5 friend were to ask us whether we would advise him to risk his all in a lottery of which the chances were ten to one against him, we should do our best to dissuade him from running such a risk. Even if he were so lucky as to get the thirty thou-  
10 sand pound prize, we should not admit that we had counselled him ill; and we should certainly think it the height of injustice in him to accuse us of having been actuated by malice. We think Addison's advice good advice. It rested on a sound  
15 principle, the result of long and wide experience. The general rule undoubtedly is that, when a successful work of imagination has been produced, it should not be recast. We cannot at this moment call to mind a single instance in which this rule  
20 has been transgressed with happy effect, except the instance of the Rape of the Lock. Tasso recast his Jerusalem. Akenside recast his Pleasures of the Imagination, and his Epistle to Curio. Pope himself, emboldened no doubt by the success with  
25 which he had expanded and remodelled the Rape of the Lock, made the same experiment on the Dunciad. All these attempts failed. Who was to foresee that Pope would, once in his life, be able to do what he could not himself do twice, and what  
30 nobody else has ever done?

Addison's advice was good. But had it been bad, why should we pronounce it dishonest? Scott tells us that one of his best friends predicted the failure of *Waverley*. Herder adjured Goethe not to take so unpromising a subject as *Faust*. Hume tried to dissuade Robertson from writing the *History of Charles the Fifth*. Nay, Pope himself was one of those who prophesied that *Cato* would never succeed on the stage, and advised Addison to print it without risking a representation. But Scott, Goethe, Robertson, Addison, had the good sense and generosity to give their advisers credit for the best intentions. Pope's heart was not of the same kind with theirs.

In 1715, while he was engaged in translating the *Iliad*, he met Addison at a coffee-house. Philips and Budgell were there; but their sovereign got rid of them, and asked Pope to dine with him alone. After dinner, Addison said that he lay under a difficulty which he wished to explain. "Tickell," he said, "translated some time ago the first book of the *Iliad*. I have promised to look it over and correct it. I cannot, therefore, ask to see yours, for that would be double-dealing." Pope made a civil reply, and begged that his second book might have the advantage of Addison's revision. Addison readily agreed, looked over the second book, and sent it back with warm commendations.

Tickell's version of the first book appeared soon

after this conversation. In the preface, all rivalry was earnestly disclaimed. Tickell declared that he should not go on with the *Iliad*. That enterprise he should leave to powers which he admitted to be superior to his own. His only view, he said, in publishing this specimen was to bespeak the favor of the public to a translation of the *Odyssey*, in which he had made some progress.

Addison, and Addison's devoted followers, pronounced both the versions good, but maintained that Tickell's had more of the original. The town gave a decided preference to Pope's. We do not think it worth while to settle such a question of precedence. Neither of the rivals can be said to have translated the *Iliad*, unless indeed, the word translation be used in the sense which it bears in the *Midsummer Night's Dream*. When Bottom makes his appearance with an ass's head instead of his own, Peter Quince exclaims, "Bless thee! Bottom, bless thee! thou art translated." In this sense, undoubtedly, the readers of either Pope or Tickell may very properly exclaim, "Bless thee! Homer; thou art translated indeed."

Our readers will, we hope, agree with us in thinking that no man in Addison's situation could have acted more fairly and kindly, both towards Pope, and towards Tickell, than he appears to have done. But an odious suspicion had sprung up in the mind of Pope. He fancied, and he soon firmly believed, that there was a deep con-

spiracy against his fame and his fortunes. The work on which he had staked his reputation was to be depreciated. The subscription, on which rested his hopes of a competence, was to be defeated. With this view Addison had made a rival translation: Tickell had consented to father it; and the wits of Button's had united to puff it. 5

Is there any external evidence to support this grave accusation? The answer is short. There is absolutely none. 10

Was there any internal evidence which proved Addison to be the author of this version? Was it a work which Tickell was incapable of producing? Surely not. Tickell was a fellow of a college at Oxford, and must be supposed to have been able to construe the Iliad; and he was a better versifier than his friend. We are not aware that Pope pretended to have discovered any turns of expression peculiar to Addison. Had such turns of expression been discovered, they would be sufficiently accounted for by supposing Addison to have corrected his friend's lines, as he owned that he had done. 15 20

Is there anything in the character of the accused persons which makes the accusation probable? We answer confidently—nothing. Tickell was long after this time described by Pope himself as a very fair and worthy man. Addison had been, during many years, before the public. Literary rivals, political opponents, had kept their eyes on him. 25 30

But neither envy nor faction, in their utmost rage, had ever imputed to him a single deviation from the laws of honor and of social morality. Had he been indeed a man meanly jealous of fame, and capable of stooping to base and wicked arts for the purpose of injuring his competitors, would his vices have remained latent so long? He was a writer of tragedy: had he ever injured Rowe? He was a writer of comedy: had he not done ample justice to Congreve, and given valuable help to Steele? He was a pamphleteer: have not his good nature and generosity been acknowledged by Swift, his rival in fame and his adversary in politics?

That Tickell should have been guilty of a villany seems to us highly improbable. That Addison should have been guilty of a villany seems to us highly improbable. But that these two men should have conspired together to commit a villany seems to us improbable in a tenfold degree. All that is known to us of their intercourse tends to prove, that it was not the intercourse of two accomplices in crime. These are some of the lines in which Tickell poured forth his sorrow over the coffin of Addison:—

“Or dost thou warn poor mortals left behind,  
 A task well suited to thy gentle mind?  
 Oh, if sometimes thy spotless form descend,  
 To me thine aid, thou guardian genius, lend,  
 When rage misguides me, or when fear alarms,

When pain distresses, or when pleasure charms,  
 In silent whisperings purer thoughts impart,  
 And turn from ill a frail and feeble heart;  
 Lead through the paths thy virtue trod before,  
 Till bliss shall join, nor death can part us more." 5

In what words, we should like to know, did this guardian genius invite his pupil to join in a plan such as the editor of the *Satirist* would hardly dare to propose to the editor of the *Age*?

We do not accuse Pope of bringing an accusation 10  
 which he knew to be false. We have not the  
 smallest doubt that he believed it to be true; and  
 the evidence on which he believed it he found  
 in his own bad heart. His own life was one long  
 series of tricks, as mean and as malicious as that of 15  
 which he suspected Addison and Tickell. He was  
 all stiletto and mask. To injure, to insult, and to  
 save himself from the consequences of injury and  
 insult by lying and equivocating, was the habit of  
 his life. He published a lampoon on the Duke of 20  
 Chandos; he was taxed with it; and he lied and  
 equivocated. He published a lampoon on Aaron  
 Hill; he was taxed with it; and he lied and  
 equivocated. He published a still fouler lampoon  
 on Lady Mary Wortley Montague; he was taxed 25  
 with it; and he lied with more than usual effron-  
 tery and vehemence. He puffed himself and  
 abused his enemies under feigned names. He  
 robbed himself of his own letters, and then raised  
 the hue and cry after them. Besides his frauds of 30

malignity, of fear, of interest, and of vanity, there were frauds which he seems to have committed from love of fraud alone. He had a habit of stratagem, a pleasure in outwitting all who came  
 5 near him. Whatever his object might be, the indirect road to it was that which he preferred. For Bolingbroke, Pope undoubtedly felt as much love and veneration as it was in his nature to feel for any human being. Yet Pope was scarcely dead  
 10 when it was discovered that, from no motive except the mere love of artifice, he had been guilty of an act of gross perfidy to Bolingbroke.

Nothing was more natural than that such a man as this should attribute to others that which he  
 15 felt within himself. A plain, probable, coherent explanation is frankly given to him. He is certain that it is all a romance. A line of conduct scrupulously fair, and even friendly, is pursued towards him. He is convinced that it is merely a  
 20 cover for a vile intrigue by which he is to be disgraced and ruined. It is vain to ask him for proofs. He has none, and wants none, except those which he carries in his own bosom.

Whether Pope's malignity at length provoked  
 25 Addison to retaliate for the first and last time, cannot now be known with certainty. We have only Pope's story, which runs thus. A pamphlet appeared containing some reflections which stung Pope to the quick. What those reflections were,  
 30 and whether they were reflections of which he had



a right to complain, we have now no means of deciding. The Earl of Warwick, a foolish and vicious lad, who regarded Addison with the feelings with which such lads generally regard their best friends, told Pope, truly or falsely, that this pamphlet had been written by Addison's direction. When we consider what a tendency stories have to grow, in passing even from one honest man to another honest man, and when we consider that to the name of honest man neither Pope nor the Earl of Warwick had a claim, we are not disposed to attach much importance to this anecdote.

It is certain, however, that Pope was furious. He had already sketched the character of Atticus in prose. In his anger he turned this prose into the brilliant and energetic lines which everybody knows by heart, or ought to know by heart, and sent them to Addison. One charge which Pope has enforced with great skill is probably not without foundation. Addison was, we are inclined to believe, too fond of presiding over a circle of humble friends. Of the other imputations which these famous lines are intended to convey, scarcely one has ever been proved to be just, and some are certainly false. That Addison was not in the habit of "damning with faint praise" appears from innumerable passages in his writings, and from none more than from those in which he mentions Pope. And it is not merely unjust, but ridiculous, to describe a man who made the fortune



of almost every one of his intimate friends, as "so obliging that he ne'er obliged."

That Addison felt the sting of Pope's satire keenly, we cannot doubt. That he was conscious  
 5 of one of the weaknesses with which he was reproached is highly probable. But his heart, we firmly believe, acquitted him of the gravest part of the accusation. He acted like himself. As a satirist he was, at his own weapons, more than  
 10 Pope's match, and he would have been at no loss for topics. A distorted and diseased body, tenanted by a yet more distorted and diseased mind; spite and envy thinly disguised by sentiments as benevolent and noble as those which Sir  
 15 Peter Teazle admired in Mr. Joseph Surface; a feeble, sickly licentiousness; an odious love of filthy and noisome images; these were things which a genius less powerful than that to which we owe the *Spectator* could easily have held up to the mirth and hatred of mankind. Addison had,  
 20 moreover, at his command, other means of vengeance which a bad man would not have scrupled to use. He was powerful in the state. Pope was a Catholic; and, in those times, a minister would  
 25 have found it easy to harass the most innocent Catholic by innumerable petty vexations. Pope, near twenty years later, said that "through the lenity of the government alone he could live with comfort." "Consider," he exclaimed, "the injury  
 30 that a man of high rank and credit may do to a

private person, under penal laws and many other disadvantages." It is pleasing to reflect that the only revenge which Addison took was to insert in the *Freeholder* a warm encomium on the translation of the *Iliad*, and to exhort all lovers of learning to put down their names as subscribers. There could be no doubt, he said, from the specimens already published, that the masterly hand of Pope would do as much for Homer as Dryden had done for Virgil. From that time to the end of his life, he always treated Pope, by Pope's own acknowledgment, with justice. Friendship was, of course, at an end.

One reason which induced the Earl of Warwick to play the ignominious part of talebearer on this occasion, may have been his dislike of the marriage which was about to take place between his mother and Addison. The Countess Dowager, a daughter of the old and honorable family of the Middletons of Chirk, a family which, in any country but ours, would be called noble, resided at Holland House. Addison had, during some years, occupied at Chelsea a small dwelling, once the abode of Nell Gwynn. Chelsea is now a district of London, and Holland House may be called a town residence. But, in the days of Anne and George the First, milkmaids and sportsmen wandered between green hedges, and over fields bright with daisies, from Kensington almost to the shore of the Thames. Addison and Lady Warwick were coun- 30

try neighbors, and became intimate friends. The great wit and scholar tried to allure the young lord from the fashionable amusements of beating watchmen, breaking windows, and rolling women  
 5 in hogsheads down Holborn Hill, to the study of letters and the practice of virtue. These well-meant exertions did little good, however, either to the disciple or to the master. Lord Warwick grew up a rake; and Addison fell in love. The  
 10 mature beauty of the countess has been celebrated by poets in language which, after a very large allowance has been made for flattery, would lead us to believe that she was a fine woman; and her rank doubtless heightened her attractions. The court-  
 15 ship was long. The hopes of the lover appear to have risen and fallen with the fortunes of his party. His attachment was at length matter of such notoriety that, when he visited Ireland for the last time, Rowe addressed some consolatory verses  
 20 to the Chloe of Holland House. It strikes us as a little strange that, in these verses, Addison should be called Lycidas, a name of singularly evil omen for a swain just about to cross St. George's Channel.

25 At length Chloe capitulated. Addison was indeed able to treat with her on equal terms. He had reason to expect preferment even higher than that which he had attained. He had inherited the fortune of a brother who died Governor of  
 30 Madras. He had purchased an estate in Warwick-

shire, and had been welcomed to his domain in very tolerable verse by one of the neighboring squires, the poetical fox-hunter, William Somerville. In August, 1716, the newspapers announced that Joseph Addison, Esquire, famous for many excellent works, both in verse and prose, had espoused the Countess Dowager of Warwick.

He now fixed his abode at Holland House, a house which can boast of a greater number of inmates distinguished in political and literary history than any other private dwelling in England. His portrait still hangs there. The features are pleasing; the complexion is remarkably fair; but in the expression we trace rather the gentleness of his disposition than the force and keenness of his intellect.

Not long after his marriage he reached the height of civil greatness. The Whig Government had, during some time, been torn by internal dissensions. Lord Townshend led one section of the Cabinet, Lord Sunderland the other. At length, in the spring of 1717, Sunderland triumphed. Townshend retired from office, and was accompanied by Walpole and Cowper. Sunderland proceeded to reconstruct the Ministry; and Addison was appointed Secretary of State. It is certain that the Seals were pressed upon him, and were at first declined by him. Men equally versed in official business might easily have been found; and his colleagues knew that they could not expect assist-

ance from him in debate. He owed his elevation to his popularity, to his stainless probity, and to his literary fame.

But scarcely had Addison entered the Cabinet when his health began to fail. From one serious attack he recovered in the autumn; and his recovery was celebrated in Latin verses, worthy of his own pen, by Vincent Bourne, who was then at Trinity College, Cambridge. A relapse soon took place; and, in the following spring, Addison was prevented by a severē asthma from discharging the duties of his post. He resigned it, and was succeeded by his friend Craggs, a young man whose natural parts, though little improved by cultivation, were quick and showy, whose graceful person and winning manners had made him generally acceptable in society, and who, if he had lived, would probably have been the most formidable of all the rivals of Walpole.

As yet there was no Joseph Hume. The ministers, therefore, were able to bestow on Addison a retiring pension of fifteen hundred pounds a year. In what form this pension was given we are not told by the biographers, and have not time to inquire. But it is certain that Addison did not vacate his seat in the House of Commons.

Rest of mind and body seemed to have reestablished his health; and he thanked God, with cheerful piety, for having set him free both from his office and from his asthma. Many years

seemed to be before him, and he meditated many works, a tragedy on the death of Socrates, a translation of the Psalms, a treatise on the evidences of Christianity. Of this last performance, a part, which we could well spare, has come down to us. 5

But the fatal complaint soon returned, and gradually prevailed against all the resources of medicine. It is melancholy to think that the last months of such a life should have been overclouded both by domestic and by political vexations. A 10 tradition which began early, which has been generally received, and to which we have nothing to oppose, has represented his wife as an arrogant and imperious woman. It is said that, till his health failed him, he was glad to escape from the Countess Dowager and her magnificent dining-room, blazing with the gilded devices of the house of Rich, to some tavern where he could enjoy a laugh, a talk about Virgil and Boileau, and a bottle of claret with the friends of his happier 20 days. All those friends, however, were not left to him. Sir Richard Steele had been gradually estranged by various causes. He considered himself as one who, in evil times, had braved martyrdom for his political principles, and demanded, when the Whig party was triumphant, a large 25 compensation for what he had suffered when it was militant. The Whig leaders took a very different view of his claims. They thought that he had, by his own petulance and folly, brought them as well 30

as himself into trouble, and though they did not absolutely neglect him, doled out favors to him with a sparing hand. It was natural that he should be angry with them, and especially angry  
 5 with Addison. But what above all seems to have disturbed Sir Richard, was the elevation of Tickell, who, at thirty, was made by Addison Undersecretary of State; while the editor of the *Tatler* and *Spectator*, the author of the *Crisis*, the member  
 10 for Stockbridge who had been persecuted for firm adherence to the house of Hanover, was, at near fifty, forced, after many solicitations and complaints, to content himself with a share in the patent of Drury Lane Theatre. Steele himself says, in  
 15 his celebrated letter to Congreve, that Addison, by his preference of Tickell, "incurred the warmest resentment of other gentlemen;" and everything seems to indicate that, of those resentful gentlemen, Steele was himself one.

20 While poor Sir Richard was brooding over what he considered as Addison's unkindness, a new cause of quarrel arose. The Whig party, already divided against itself, was rent by a new schism. The celebrated bill for limiting the number of peers  
 25 had been brought in. The proud Duke of Somerset, first in rank of all the nobles whose origin permitted them to sit in Parliament, was the ostensible author of the measure. But it was supported, and, in truth, devised by the Prime  
 30 Minister.



We are satisfied that the bill was most pernicious; and we fear that the motives which induced Sunderland to frame it were not honorable to him. But we cannot deny that it was supported by many of the best and wisest men of that age. Nor was this strange. The royal prerogative had, within the memory of the generation then in the vigor of life, been so grossly abused, that it was still regarded with a jealousy which, when the peculiar situation of the House of Brunswick is considered, may perhaps be called immoderate. The particular prerogative of creating peers had, in the opinion of the Whigs, been grossly abused by Queen Anne's last Ministry; and even the Tories admitted that her majesty in swamping, as it has since been called, the Upper House, had done what only an extreme case could justify. The theory of the English constitution, according to many high authorities, was that three independent powers, the sovereign, the nobility, and the commons, ought constantly to act as checks on each other. If this theory were sound, it seemed to follow that to put one of these powers under the absolute control of the other two was absurd. But if the number of peers were unlimited, it could not well be denied that the Upper House was under the absolute control of the Crown and the Commons, and was indebted only to their moderation for any power which it might be suffered to retain.



Steele took part with the Opposition, Addison with the ministers. Steele, in a paper called the *Plebeian*, vehemently attacked the bill. Sunderland called for help on Addison, and Addison  
 5 obeyed the call. In a paper called the *Old Whig*, he answered, and indeed refuted Steele's arguments. It seems to us that the premises of both the controversialists were unsound, that, on those premises, Addison reasoned well and Steele ill, and  
 10 that consequently Addison brought out a false conclusion, while Steele blundered upon the truth. In style, in wit, and in politeness, Addison maintained his superiority, though the *Old Whig* is by no means one of his happiest performances.

15 At first, both the anonymous opponents observed the laws of propriety. But at length Steele so far forgot himself as to throw an odious imputation on the morals of the chiefs of the administration. Addison replied with severity, but, in our opinion,  
 20 with less severity than was due to so grave an offence against morality and decorum; nor did he, in his just anger, forget for a moment the laws of good taste and good breeding. One calumny which has been often repeated, and never yet contradicted,  
 25 it is our duty to expose. It is asserted in the *Biographia Britannica*, that Addison designated Steele as "little Dicky." This assertion was repeated by Johnson, who had never seen the *Old Whig*, and was therefore excusable. It has also  
 30 been repeated by Miss Aikin, who has seen the *Old*

*Whig*, and for whom therefore there is less excuse. Now, it is true that the words "little Dicky" occur in the *Old Whig*, and that Steele's name was Richard. It is equally true that the words "little Isaac" occur in the *Duenna*, and that Newton's name was Isaac. But we confidently affirm that Addison's little Dicky had no more to do with Steele, than Sheridan's little Isaac with Newton. If we apply the words "little Dicky" to Steele, we deprive a very lively and ingenious passage, not only of all its wit, but of all its meaning. Little Dicky was the nickname of Henry Norris, an actor of remarkably small stature, but of great humor, who played the usurer Gomez, then a most popular part, in Dryden's *Spanish Friar*.

The merited reproof which Steele had received, though softened by some kind and courteous expressions, galled him bitterly. He replied with little force and great acrimony; but no rejoinder appeared. Addison was fast hastening to his grave; and had, we may well suppose, little disposition to prosecute a quarrel with an old friend. His complaint had terminated in dropsy. He bore up long and manfully. But at length he abandoned all hope, dismissed his physicians, and calmly prepared himself to die.

His works he intrusted to the care of Tickell, and dedicated them a very few days before his death to Craggs, in a letter written with the sweet and graceful eloquence of a Saturday's *Spectator*.

In this, his last composition, he alluded to his approaching end in words so manly, so cheerful, and so tender, that it is difficult to read them without tears. At the same time he earnestly  
5 recommended the interests of Tickell to the care of Craggs.

Within a few hours of the time at which this dedication was written, Addison sent to beg Gay, who was then living by his wits about town, to  
10 come to Holland House. Gay went, and was received with great kindness. To his amazement his forgiveness was implored by the dying man. Poor Gay, the most good-natured and simple of  
15 mankind, could not imagine what he had to forgive. There was, however, some wrong, the remembrance of which weighed on Addison's mind, and which he declared himself anxious to repair. He was in a state of extreme exhaustion; and the parting was doubtless a friendly one on  
20 both sides. Gay supposed that some plan to serve him had been in agitation at Court, and had been frustrated by Addison's influence. Nor is this improbable. Gay had paid assiduous court to the royal family. But in the Queen's days he  
25 had been the eulogist of Bolingbroke, and was still connected with many Tories. It is not strange that Addison, while heated by conflict, should have thought himself justified in obstructing the preferment of one whom he might regard as a  
30 political enemy. Neither is it strange that, when

reviewing his whole life, and earnestly scrutinizing all his motives, he should think that he had acted an unkind and ungenerous part, in using his power against a distressed man of letters, who was as harmless and as helpless as a child. 5

One inference may be drawn from this anecdote. It appears that Addison, on his death-bed, called himself to a strict account, and was not at ease till he had asked pardon for an injury which it was not even suspected that he had committed, for an injury which would have caused disquiet only to a very tender conscience. Is it not then reasonable to infer that, if he had really been guilty of forming a base conspiracy against the fame and fortunes of a rival, he would have expressed some remorse for so serious a crime? But it is unnecessary to multiply arguments and evidence for the defence, when there is neither argument nor evidence for the accusation. 10 15

The last moments of Addison were perfectly serene. His interview with his son-in-law is universally known. "See," he said, "how a Christian can die." The piety of Addison was, in truth, of a singularly cheerful character. The feeling which predominates in all his devotional writings is gratitude. God was to him the allwise and allpowerful friend who had watched over his cradle with more than maternal tenderness; who had listened to his cries before they could form themselves in prayer; who had preserved his youth 20 25 30

from the snares of vice; who had made his cup run over with worldly blessings; who had doubled the value of those blessings by bestowing a thankful heart to enjoy them, and dear friends to  
5 partake them; who had rebuked the waves of the Ligurian gulf, had purified the autumnal air of the Campagna, and had restrained the avalanches of Mont Cenis. Of the Psalms, his favorite was that which represents the Ruler of all  
10 things under the endearing image of a shepherd, whose crook guides the flock safe, through gloomy and desolate glens, to meadows well watered and rich with herbage. On that goodness to which he ascribed all the happiness of his life, he relied in  
15 the hour of death with the love that casteth out fear. He died on the seventeenth of June, 1719. He had just entered on his forty-eighth year.

His body lay in state in the Jerusalem Chamber, and was borne thence to the Abbey at dead of  
20 night. The choir sang a funeral hymn. Bishop Atterbury, one of those Tories who had loved and honored the most accomplished of the Whigs, met the corpse, and led the procession by torchlight, round the shrine of Saint Edward and the graves  
25 of the Plantagenets, to the Chapel of Henry the Seventh. On the north side of that chapel, in the vault of the house of Albemarle, the coffin of Addison lies next to the coffin of Montague. Yet a few months, and the same mourners passed again  
30 along the same aisle. The same sad anthem was

again chanted. The same vault was again opened; and the coffin of Craggs was placed close to the coffin of Addison.

Many tributes were paid to the memory of Addison; but one alone is now remembered. Tickell 5 bewailed his friend in an elegy which would do honor to the greatest name in our literature, and which unites the energy and magnificence of Dryden to the tenderness and purity of Cowper. This fine poem was prefixed to a superb edition of Addison's works, which was published in 1721, by 10 subscription. The names of the subscribers proved how widely his fame had been spread. That his countrymen should be eager to possess his writings, even in a costly form, is not wonderful. 15 But it is wonderful that, though English literature was then little studied on the continent, Spanish grandees, Italian prelates, marshals of France, should be found in the list. Among the most remarkable names are those of the Queen of 20 Sweden, of Prince Eugene, of the Grand Duke of Tuscany, of the Dukes of Parma, Modena, and Guastalla, of the Doge of Genoa, of the Regent Orleans, and of Cardinal Dubois. We ought to add that this edition, though eminently beautiful, 25 is in some important points defective; nor, indeed, do we yet possess a complete collection of Addison's writings.

It is strange that neither his opulent and noble widow, nor any of his powerful and attached 30

friends, should have thought of placing even a simple tablet, inscribed with his name, on the walls of the Abbey. It was not till three generations had laughed and wept over his pages, that the  
 5 omission was supplied by the public veneration. At length, in our own time, his image, skilfully graven, appeared in Poet's Corner. It represents him, as we can conceive him, clad in his dressing-gown, and freed from his wig, stepping from his  
 10 parlor at Chelsea into his trim little garden, with the account of the Everlasting Club, or the Loves of Hilpa and Shalum, just finished for the next day's *Spectator*, in his hand. Such a mark of national respect was due to the unsullied states-  
 15 man, to the accomplished scholar, to the master of pure English eloquence, to the consummate painter of life and manners. It was due, above all, to the great satirist, who alone knew how to use  
 20 ridicule without abusing it, who, without inflicting a wound, effected a great social reform, and who reconciled wit and virtue, after a long and disastrous separation, during which wit had been led astray by profligacy, and virtue by fanaticism.





## NOTES

Although these notes are critical, they include few questions in regard to Macaulay's structure and style. It is deemed that the Introduction affords a sufficient starting-point for studies in that direction. Explanations of names, etc., must be sought in the Glossary.

### MILTON

This is the first of a long series of essays which Macaulay contributed to the *Edinburgh Review*. It appeared in August, 1825, immediately establishing his fame. In the preface to his collected essays he said of it that it "contained scarcely a paragraph such as his matured judgment approved," and that even after revision it remained "overloaded with gaudy and ungraceful ornament." The revision did not involve any remodeling, but only the removal of some blemishes caused by haste. A few of these changes will be noted below. In spite of Macaulay's depreciation, sincere and warranted, the essay remains a wonderful achievement for a man of twenty-four years. The critical tone is youthful, but in grasp of history and in authoritative judgment on historical matters there is no sign of juvenility.

There are biographies of Milton in the English Men of Letters series (by Mark Pattison), in Great Writers (by Richard Garnett), in Classical Writers (by Stopford A. Brooke), and there is the great six-volume *Life* by Masson. Of Milton's works, Masson's editions, large and small, are the best. The Globe edition is the most convenient.

**Page 45:** *Title.* *Joannis*, etc. All the articles in the *Edinburgh Review* were, and still are, unsigned reviews of books, printed speeches, etc., and have prefixed to them the name of the book reviewed. The magazine, though now nearly one hundred years old, has not changed its form in any respect; the very title-page remains word for word as in

the first number, except that it now bears the imprint of London instead of Edinburgh. The so-called reviews, however, are often much more than reviews. Macaulay in particular would not confine himself within such narrow limits, but made the publication of a book a pretext for writing a finished essay on the theme suggested by it. Note in this essay the point at which he leaves the book he is reviewing and launches into his general theme. When the entire essay has been read and outlined, it will be interesting to discuss the question how far Mr. J. Cotter Morison is justified in classifying it with the historical rather than with the critical essays. See Introduction, 6.

45: 9. *Mr. Skinner, Merchant.* Macaulay errs in following the conjectures of Mr. Lemon and others. Cyriack Skinner, to whom Milton indited two sonnets, was probably not a merchant. The Latin Treatise was copied out by one Daniel Skinner, an amanuensis of Milton's, was sent to Elzevir, the Amsterdam printer, but, not being published for political reasons, was probably returned to Daniel Skinner's father, who was a merchant. See Masson's *Life of Milton*, vol. vi., p. 791, or *Ency. Brit.* xvi. 328.

46: 20. *The book itself.* Could we not almost determine the date of Macaulay's essay from the internal evidence of this paragraph?

46: 28. *Polish and brighten . . . gloss and brilliancy.* One example of "overloading with gaudy ornament." Find others.

47: 3. *Quintilian stare.* See Milton's Sonnet XI. There are other quotations from Milton's sonnets in this essay.

47: 8. *We may apply.* The sentence was originally written: "What Denham with great felicity says of Cowley, may be applied to him." Why did Macaulay, in revising, invert it?

47: 9. *The garb.*

Horace's wit and Virgil's state  
 He did not steal, but emulate,  
 And when he would like them appear,  
 Their garb, but not their clothes, did wear.

—FROM DENHAM'S *Elegy on Cowley.*

47: 19. *Some of the.* Was it well to make a new paragraph here?

47: 29. *Observation.* Some editors have changed this to *observance*, but Macaulay wrote *observation* and it must stand. It is certainly a matter for surprise that he was either ignorant of, or careless about, the distinction between these forms that has held pretty well ever since Shakspeare's time. See *Century Dict.*, "observance," *syn.* The very translation which he was reviewing has always, in this connection, either *celebration* or *observance*.

49: 10. *His detractors.* It is not Macaulay's way to speak thus in general terms without having something very specific in mind. And the specific instances are usually given. A little search will show that one is given here. With this clue it may be worth while to try to find just where it has been intimated that Milton only "inherited what his predecessors created."

49: 28. *Paradoxical . . . appear.* Show that the phrase is pleonastic.

50: 2. *An age too late.* *Paradise Lost*, ix. 44. The same doubt had been expressed in a tract, "Reason of Church Government," written more than twenty years before *Paradise Lost*.

50: 12. *As civilization advances.* In mature life, Macaulay was inclined to discountenance such philosophical speculation as totally worthless. Is the theory here advanced in regard to poetry tenable? Is there not a fallacy in the premise that "the earliest poets are generally the best"? Assuming that there were lesser poets before the best, what is likely to have become of their work? Read Johnson's *Rasselas*, chapter x., and see how much of this is original with Macaulay, how much is opposed to Johnson, and how much is in agreement with him.

52: 24. *Niobe . . . Aurora.* Here again Macaulay has in mind specific passages in English poetry. Can you find them?

54: 6. *Children.* "He had a favorite theory, on which he often insisted, that children were the only true poets, and this because of the vividness of their impressions, . . . as if the force of the impression were everything, and its

character nothing. By this rule, wax-work should be finer art than the best sculpture in stone."—J. COTTER MORISON.

**56: 13.** *Great talents.* A sly thrust at Wordsworth. Consider the respective ages of the two men and draw your conclusion as to one trait of Macaulay's character.

**56: 19.** *No poet.* Introduction, **13.**

**58: 1.** *About him.* Macaulay boasted that if all the copies of *Paradise Lost* were destroyed, he could reproduce most of the poem from memory. A comparison of the lines here quoted with the original (iv. 551) will show what accuracy might have been expected in the reproduction. The lines, as Macaulay first printed them, were even more inaccurate.

**58: 27.** *Put their sickles.* Readers familiar with the Bible will note in these essays a surprisingly large number of Biblical echoes.

**59: 30.** *Burial-places of the memory.* One of the most striking and beautiful figures in these essays. A late writer on style, Mr. Walter Raleigh, has made it more vivid perhaps, but not more beautiful, when he writes: "The mind of man is peopled like some silent city, with a sleeping company of reminiscences, associations, impressions, attitudes, emotions, to be awakened into fierce activity at the touch of words."

**60: 9.** *The miserable failure.* Does this last sentence add to the beauty of the paragraph? To the force of the argument? Which is the more probable—that the instance grew out of the argument, or the argument out of the instance? Dryden, by the way, is said to have had Milton's "somewhat contemptuous consent" to try to "tag his verses."

**62: 2.** *Mr. Newbery.* A good example of Macaulay's love of specific details. Most writers would have omitted the name of the inventor. It is also one of the "journalistic" ear-marks. Mr. Newbery may have been well known to the British public in 1825,—it might not be easy, even if it were worth while, to find out anything about him now. The curious reader will find several Newberys in the *Dict. of Nat. Biog.*, and one of them wrote story-books for children, but he died in 1767, and the curious reader is

not certainly wiser. In like manner, in Macaulay's essay on Robert Montgomery, there are allusions to "Romanis's fleecy hosiery, Packwood's razor straps, and Rowland's Kalydor."

**64:** 3. *Sad Electra's poet.* Later in life, Macaulay changed his mind about Euripides, liking him then better than Sophocles.

**65:** 18. *Rags of a chimney-sweeper.* This figure had been used by Macaulay in his essay on Petrarch, published the year before, in *Knight's Quarterly Magazine*. Comparing Petrarch's worst poems with his best, he says: "They differ from them as a May-day procession of chimney-sweepers differs from the Field of Cloth of Gold. They have the gaudiness but not the wealth." It is interesting to note that there is an allusion to the Field of Cloth of Gold also in the present essay.

**66:** 10. *Doric delicacy.* The Doric dialect was considered less pure and elegant than the Attic, and "Doric dialect" is to-day almost equivalent to "slang." However, Mr. Stedman, thinking of Theocritus, calls the Tennysonian idyllic effects *Dorian* (*Victorian Poets*, p. 227). And the Doric order of architecture combined "great solidity with extreme delicacy and artistic taste."

**69:** 11. *Ball of St. Peter's. Inferno*, xxxi. 51. Literally, the pine-cone of St. Peter's. "This pine-cone, of bronze, was set originally upon the summit of the Mausoleum of Hadrian. . . . It was, in the sixth century, taken down and carried off to adorn a fountain . . . in front of the old basilica of Saint Peter."—C. E. NORTON: *Travel and Study in Italy*. The cone is now in the gardens of the Vatican. It is eleven feet high—which would make the giant seventy.

**69:** 18. *Mr. Cary's translation.* We have many translations now, notably Longfellow's, but Mr. Cary's (1805-14) has held its own remarkably well.

**77:** 10. *Fee-faw-fum.* For example, Tasso's *Jerusalem Delivered*, iv. 4-8; Klopstock's *Messias*, ii.

**79:** 10. *Modern beggars for fame.* This time the thrust is at Byron. Compare the allusion to the "sneer of Harold," on p. 62.

**80:** 16. *A statesman and a lover.* Milton was, we admit, a statesman, and Dante was a lover, but we are reluctant to admit much more.

**80:** 28. *Style of a bellman.* A somewhat vulgar comparison. Macaulay seems to have liked it—compare the Introduction, 7.

**81:** 12. *Neither blindness.* For the style, see *Romans* viii. 38, 39. It is interesting to compare the form in which this sentiment reappears in the History of England, written fifteen or more years later: "A mightier poet, tried at once by pain, danger, poverty, obloquy, and blindness, meditated, undisturbed by the obscene tumult which raged all around him, a song so sublime and so holy that it would not have misbecome the lips of those ethereal Virtues whom he saw, with that inner eye which no calamity could darken, flinging down on the jasper pavement their crowns of quotation in amaranth and gold." (Chap. iii.)

**82:** 9. *Juice of summer fruits.* Macaulay rarely fails to give a curiously utilitarian twist to his finest descriptions of nature. Note, too, several sentences below, how his love of antithesis pursues him even into his appreciation of scenery. In the next essay, as he follows Addison on his travels, among the things of note are "verdure under the winter solstice," "the smallest independent state in Europe," bad roads, rich plains, a healthy peasantry, simple manners and institutions. Clearly the modern nature worship had taken no strong hold upon him. Consider his life-interests and environment. See Introduction, 16, 18; and compare Emerson's statement: "The brilliant Macaulay, who expresses the tone of the English governing classes of the day, explicitly teaches that *good* means good to eat, good to wear, material commodity."

**84:** 13. *Unwonted fear.* The original reads "strange and unwonted fear." Why was "strange" expunged?

**84:** 23. *Lion.* La Fontaine's *Fables*, iii. 10; Æsop, 63 (219).

**87:** 2. *The present year.* In 1825 the Catholic Association agitated for emancipation, and Canning succeeded in passing through the House a bill for the relief of the Catholics. For Macaulay's attitude in the matter, if it cannot

be gathered from the pages that follow here, see Trevelyan's *Life*, i. 141. What double purpose does this digression upon the Revolution of 1688 serve? And what has it all to do with Milton?

**87: 17.** *Their labor.* It should be an easy matter to guess the source of this quotation. That done, it is scarcely worth while to look it up further.

**88: 4.** *To palliate.* The subtle sarcasm of this must not be overlooked. The entire paragraph may require long and close study before it yields its full meaning. The most important thing, of course, is its general drift and its bearing on the larger theme of the principles behind the English Revolution. This should be fairly clear at one reading. But this will be much reinforced by a knowledge of the historical details used as illustrations. Macaulay passes so rapidly, in his analogies and illustrations, from one thing to another, from the Rebellion to the Revolution, and from Ireland at the time of the Revolution to the Catholic countries after the restoration of the Bourbons in the present century, that one must have some grasp of general history to follow him. Take note that after the downfall of Napoleon, the Bourbon kings were reestablishing themselves. With the terrible lesson of the French Revolution behind them, they changed their phrase of "divine right" into something milder, as "legitimacy." Promising, and even granting, popular constitutions, they repeatedly broke their pledges. Ferdinand IV. of Naples (Ferdinand I. of the Two Sicilies) did thus; Ferdinand VII. of Spain did thus; and out of the despotism of the latter grew the revolt of the South American possessions. Now, these peoples were suffering for revolting against Catholic kings; the Irish, two centuries ago, had suffered for adhering to a Catholic king, and their descendants are suffering still. Yet, in the eyes of a certain class of people, it is all one. Macaulay is really arraigining all who would justify abuses, whether the abuses take the form of imperial despotism or religious persecution. If the arraignment is a little hot-headed, we remember that Macaulay was young, and that he was writing for a Whig journal.

**88: 21.** *Ferdinand, the Catholic.* It is pretty clear that



Macaulay means, not Ferdinand V., who is commonly sur-named "The Catholic," but Ferdinand VII. "Frederic the Protestant" seems to be dragged in chiefly to fill out the antithesis, though Frederick William III. of Prussia was also intolerant of liberal ideas and neglected to set up the constitutional system of government which he had promised.

94: 24. *Hume . . . address.* This is precisely the charge sometimes brought against Macaulay.

95: 16. *Unmerited fate of Strafford.* A discussion of this and of other events in the time of Charles I. may be found in Macaulay's essay on Hallam's *Constitutional History*.

95: 25. *Shouting for King Jesus.* There is no intentional irreverence here, but there is certainly a breach of good taste. The offence lies not so much in what is said as in the way in which it is said.

102: 28. *Æneæ magni dextra.* Æneas, compelled to slay the brave youth, Lausus (Vergil, *Æn.* x. 830), tries to console the dying youth, saying: "This at least, ill-starred as you are, shall solace the sadness of your death: it is great Æneas's hand that brings you low." The aptness of the comparison is evident, and affords a good illustration of Macaulay's analogic faculty (Introduction, 8).

106: 19. *Then came those days.* Whatever we may think of this passage as history, which should be above all dispassionate, we cannot withhold our admiration for it as literature. Rhetoric it may be, but it is rhetoric touched and sublimed by an almost Hebraic fervor. On the other hand, the fourth paragraph following has in it a decided ring of insincerity, so that what is meant to be eloquence is only cheap grandiloquence.

108: 7. *Calves' heads . . . oak-branches.* The Calves' Head Club was instituted in ridicule of Charles I. At its dinners a dish of calves' heads represented the king and his friends. Oak-branches were worn by Royalists on the birthday of Charles II. in memory of the time when, after the battle of Worcester, he concealed himself in an oak at Boscobel. See Clarendon's *History of the Rebellion*, xiii, 84.



109: 12. *Ecco tū fonte.*

“ See here the stream of laughter, see the spring,”  
 Quoth they, “ of danger and of deadly pain,  
 Here fond desire must by fair governing  
 Be ruled, our lust bridled with wisdom's rein.”

—TASSO: *Jerusalem Delivered*, xv. 57 (Fairfax's translation.)

116: 24. *He was not a Puritan.* Compare Masson's *Life*, vi. 840.

120: 9. *Called upon Cromwell.* Sonnet xvi.

121: 19. *Nitor in adversum.* Apollo's speech, telling how he must drive the chariot of the sun against the eastward movement of the universe: “ Against this I must contend; nor does the force which overcomes all else overcome me, but I am borne in an opposite direction to the wheeling world.” Ovid, *Metam.* ii. 72.

123: 26. *Boswellism.* In the first essay on William Pitt, this becomes “ *Lues Boswelliana*, or disease of admiration.” In the essay on Hastings, it appears as “ *Furor Biographicus.*”

124: 6. *Of these was Milton.* If Milton suffered severely at the hands of Dr. Johnson in the eighteenth century, he has had no lack of valiant champions in the nineteenth. Conspicuous among them, besides Macaulay, were Thomas de Quincey and Walter Savage Landor.

## THE LIFE AND WRITINGS OF ADDISON

Of the thirty-six essays contributed by Macaulay to the *Edinburgh Review*, this was the thirty-fourth. It appeared in July, 1843, and represents him at the maturity of his powers. It cannot quite rank, however, with such essays as those on Clive and Hastings, because the author is not so much at home in criticism as in history. Let the reader, in comparing it with the essay on Milton, note all the evidences he can find of the growth of Macaulay's mind and art. It will be profitable to read in connection with it the essays upon Addison by Johnson (*Lives of the Poets*) and Thackeray (*English Humorists*). Mr. Courthope's *Life of Addison*, in the English Men of Letters series, should be read, if possible, if only to correct some of the mistakes or exaggerations

of Macaulay's essay. Perhaps, too, in order to avoid carrying away from the prolonged study of one man a false estimate of his importance, it will be well to keep in mind the words written by a late critic, Mr. Gosse, in his *History of Eighteenth Century Literature*: "With some modification, what has been said of Addison may be repeated of Steele, whose fame has been steadily growing while the exaggerated reputation of Addison has been declining." "The time has probably gone by when either Addison or Steele could be placed at the summit of the literary life of their time. Swift and Pope, each in his own way, distinctly surpassed them."

**127: 24.** *Abject idolatry.* This is still another reference to what Macaulay elsewhere calls Boswellism, or disease of admiration. How near he comes to falling himself a victim to it in the present essay, the reader must not fail to judge.

**133: 29.** *His knowledge of Greek.* Note just what is said, and do not get the idea that Addison knew no Greek. Macaulay has a way of making his sentences seem to say more than is in their words.

**136: 10.** *Evidences of Christianity.* The essay is entitled "Of the Christian Religion." Gibbon had long before brought the same charge of superficiality against the essay.

**136: 21.** *Moved the senate to admit.* This is either one of Macaulay's exaggerations, or else "moved the senate" must be understood in a strictly parliamentary sense. What Addison wrote ("Of the Christian Religion," i. 7) is this: "Tertullian . . . tells . . . that the Emperor Tiberius, having received an account out of Palestine in Syria of the Divine Person who had appeared in that country, paid him a particular regard, and threatened to punish anyhow should accuse the Christians; nay, that the emperor would have adopted him among the deities whom they worshipped, had not the senate refused to come into his proposal."

**137: 12.** *Confounded an aphorism.* This is very boldly borrowed, without acknowledgment, from the account of Blackmore in Johnson's *Lives*. Macaulay is not always fair to Johnson. As to the second charge against Blackmore, if Macaulay found four false quantities on *one* page (he seems

to refer to the pronunciation of Latin proper names in an English poem, and not to Latin verses) he would probably consider that to be a sufficient basis for making the statement.

**138:** 28. *Exsurgit*. Again Macaulay seems to be quoting from memory, for Addison wrote *assurgit*, following Vergil, *Georgics* 3, 355. The translation of the lines is: "Now into mid-ranks strides the lofty leader of the Pygmies, of awful majesty and venerable port, overtopping all the rest with his gigantic bulk, and towering to half an ell."

**142:** 18. *After his bees*. The figure was suggested by the subject-matter of a portion of the fourth *Georgic*—the hiving and care of bees. It is made more appropriate too by the familiar legend, told of many poets and particularly of Pindar, that bees swarmed upon their lips in infancy, portending the sweetness of their future songs.

**149:** 12. *The accomplished men*. See Boswell's *Johnson*.

**149:** 23. *Johnson will have it*. In his life of Addison. It is interesting to see how Macaulay delights in setting his opinion against the great Doctor's. In his biographical essay upon him, however, he is generous enough, though, as Mr. Morison says, his "appreciation is inadequate."

**150:** 16. *No poem . . . in dead language*. Macaulay, in his various essays, repeats freely his ideas and illustrations. Turn to his essay on Frederic the Great, and in the passage beginning at about the eleventh paragraph, will be found this same discussion, together with the account of Frederic the Great's accomplishments in French, and an allusion to "Newdigate and Seatonian poetry." It is a good example of the working of the psychologic law of association. And any one familiar with the essays can turn to a dozen such examples.

**151:** 22. *Ne croyez*. "Do not think, however, that I mean by this to condemn the Latin verses of one of your illustrious scholars which you have sent me. I find them excellent, worthy indeed of Vida or Sannazaro, though not of Horace and Vergil."

**152:** 10. *Quid numeris*. "Why, O Muse, dost thou bid me, a Frank, born far this side of the Alps, again to stammer in Latin verse?"

**153:** 7. *An event*. This union of France and Spain left

the other countries of Europe at a great disadvantage, and led to the Grand Alliance against France and Spain, and the long War of the Spanish Succession (1701-1714).

**154:** 29. *More wonder than pleasure.* Not, perhaps, until Ruskin's *Stones of Venice*, (1851-53) was Gothic architecture fully appreciated by the English.

**155:** 17. *Soliloquy.* For the famous soliloquy in Addison's *Tragedy of Cato*, see Act V., Sc. I.

**158:** 8. *Tory fox-hunter.* Addison's *Freeholder*, No. 22.

**158:** 15. *Tomb of Misenus.* *Æneid* VI., 233.—*Circe.* *Æn.* VII., 10.

**162:** 7. *He became tutor.* Probably incorrect. See Glossary, SOMERSET.

**164:** 13. *The position of Mr. Canning.* That is, the position of a moderate Tory, favoring the measures and reforms advocated by the Whigs.

**167:** 12. *Famous similitude.* Containing the famous line, "Rides in the whirlwind and directs the storm."

**169:** 2. *Life-guardsmen.* Members of the Life Guards must be six feet tall. As to Shaw, cf. note on MR. NEWBURY, **62:** 2.

**173:** 19. *Spectre Huntsman.* Macaulay may be thinking of Byron's verse, "The spectre huntsman of Onesti's line." (*Don Juan*, iii., 106). "Ravenna's immemorial wood," says Byron, "Boccaccio's lore and Dryden's lay made haunted ground to me." Addison should have known the story from Boccaccio's tale. Dryden's versification of it, *Theodore and Honoria*, was only published in 1700, while Addison was abroad, and it is not likely he had read it before visiting Ravenna, though he might well have read it before writing up his travels. However, Macaulay fails to consider that not all memories respond to suggestions so readily as his own. At one place in his journal, for instance, he tells how he visited Louis the Fourteenth's bedroom, and—"I thought of all St. Simon's anecdotes about that room and bed."

**173:** 25. *Greatest lyric poet.* This is extravagant praise.

**177:** 4. *The Censorship of the Press.* This practically ceased in 1679, when the statute for the regulation of printing, which was passed just after the Restoration, expired.

**178: 12.** *In Grub street.* Does this mean that Walpole and Pulteney lived in Grub street?

**179: 27.** *Popularity . . . timidity.* One of Macaulay's paradoxes.

**181: 4.** *He had one habit.* "He [Macaulay] too frequently resorts to vulgar gaudiness. For example, there is in one place a certain description of an alleged practice of Addison's. Swift had said of Esther Johnson that 'whether from easiness in general, or from her indifference to persons, or from her despair of mending them, or from the same practice which she most liked in Mr. Addison, I cannot determine; but when she saw any of the company very warm in a wrong opinion, she was more inclined to confirm them in it than to oppose them. It prevented noise, she said, and saved time.' Let us behold what a picture Macaulay draws on the strength of this passage. 'If his first attempts to set a presuming dunce right were ill-received,' Macaulay says of Addison, 'he changed his tone, "assented with civil leer," and lured the flattered coxcomb deeper and deeper into absurdity.' To compare this transformation of the simplicity of the original into the grotesque heat and overcharged violence of the copy, is to see the homely maiden of a country village transformed into the painted flaunter of the city."—JOHN MORLEY. Macaulay's quotation, "assented with civil leer," is from Pope's well-known line:

"Damn with faint praise, assent with civil leer."

**181: 12.** *Criticisms . . . dialogue.* *Tatler*, 163; *Spectator*, 568.

**184: 12.** *Steele.* "The character of Steele, with his chivalry and his derelictions, his high ideal and his broken resolves, has been a favorite one with recent biographers, who prefer his rough address to the excessive and meticulous civility of Addison. It is permissible to love them both, and to see in each the complement of the other. It is proved that writers like Macaulay and even Thackeray have overcharged the picture of Steele's delinquencies, and have exaggerated the amount of Addison's patronage of his friend. But nothing can explain away Steele's carelessness in money matters or his inconsistency in questions of moral

detail. He was very quick, warm-hearted and impulsive, while Addison had the advantage of a cold and phlegmatic constitution. Against the many eulogists of the younger man we may place Leigh Hunt's sentence: 'I prefer open-hearted Steele with all his faults to Addison with all his essays.'"—GOSSE: *History of Eighteenth Century Literature* (1889). See also Aitken's *Life of Steele*, II., 345 and else where.

**185:** 14. *Provoked Addison.* Landor's "Imaginary Conversation between Steele and Addison" will be interesting reading in this connection.

**186:** 10. *The real history.* See Introduction, **12.**

**191:** 23. *By mere accident.* As a matter of fact, critics are pretty well agreed that Steele led the way everywhere, though in certain respects Addison often outshone him. In the words of Mr. Aitken, Steele's biographer, "the world owes Addison to Steele."

**192:** 3. *Half German jargon.* Carlyle had for some years, like Coleridge before him, been acting as a medium between German philosophy and literature and English. Of course Macaulay is ridiculing Carlyle's uncouth style. Landor, another stickler for pure English, said upon the appearance of Carlyle's *Frédéric* that he was convinced he (Landor) wrote two dead languages—Latin and English.

**196:** 18. *Revenge . . . wreaked.* Who Bettsworth and De Pompignan were is not important. Can it be determined from the text who "wreaked revenge" upon them?

**200:** 1. *White staff.* Official badge of the Lord High Treasurer.

**200:** 15. *We calmly review.* Calmly, perhaps, but not impartially. Macaulay's Whig prejudices are very apparent.

**201:** 25. *Lost his fortune.* It is very probable, however, that Addison was still what might be called "independently rich."

**207:** 19. *The following papers.* Nos. 26, 329, 69, 317, 159, 343, 517.

**208:** 16. *The stamp tax.* A Tory measure of 1712 virtually aimed at the freedom of the press.

**210:** 4. *Easy solution.* Macaulay's essays are full of these easy solutions. They are usually mere guesses, but it must be admitted that they are usually sensible ones.

**211:** 11. *From the city.* That is, from the mercantile portion of the city—the original city of London.

**213:** 30. *The French model.* This refers to dramas of the so-called Classical school, which adhered closely to certain conventional rules—the three “unities,” for instance, of time, place and action. The Shakspearean drama is constructed with far greater freedom.

**215:** 1. *But among.* Why is this long paragraph allowed to stand as a unit, when it could easily be subdivided? And why are some short paragraphs (the ninth preceding, for example) allowed to stand, when they could easily be combined with the others?

**215:** 28. *Malice.* Toward whom?

**221:** 27. *The Swift of 1708.* 1708 was the date of one of Swift's best poems, *Baucis and Philemon*, and of the attack upon astrology in the pamphlet against Partridge, the almanac-maker, which Macaulay has already mentioned. In 1738, the year of his last published writing (long after the death of Addison, be it noted), he was an old man on the verge of insanity.

**222:** 27. *Ilud.* VI., 226. Diomedes speaks to Glaucus: “So let us shun each other's spears, even among the throng; Trojans are there in multitudes and famous allies for me to slay, whoe'er it be that God vouchsafeth me, and my feet overtake; and for thee are there Achaians in multitude, to slay whome'er thou canst.”—LEAF's translation.

**232:** 17. *All stiletto and mask.* For Macaulay's portrait of Pope, as of Steele, many allowances must be made.

**233:** 26. *Cannot . . . certainty.* See Courthope's *Addison*, chapter vii.

**234:** 16. *Energetic lines.* The “Epistle to Dr. Arbuthnot” (Prologue to the *Satires*), lines 193-214.

**236:** 22. *Holland House.* Macaulay has celebrated this mansion of social fame in one of his most ambitious periods—the concluding paragraph of the essay on Lord Holland, a strange compound of artificiality of form and undeniable sincerity of feeling.

**237:** 19. *Consolatory verses.* Not, of course, because he was to visit Ireland for the last time, but because he had to visit Ireland at all.



**244: 11.** *Little Dicky was the nickname.* In the article as originally printed in the *Edinburgh Review* this sentence stands: "Little Dicky was evidently the nickname of some comic actor who played the usurer Gomez," etc. Macaulay, having discovered later that his guess was entirely right, inserted the name of the actor into the revised essay. But it may be noticed that, in the face of this positive information, his preceding argument and "confident affirmation," which he allowed to remain as written, now fall a little flat.

**247: 10.** *Shepherd, whose crook.* It is a little hard to forgive Macaulay for yielding so often to the temptation to paraphrase the most beautiful and most exalted passages in literature. The echoes from *Comus* in his essay on Milton will be remembered. And in his essay on Boswell's *Life of Johnson* he has ventured thus to lay hands on one of the sublimest utterances in Dante—Cacciaguida's prophecy of Dante's banishment:

"Thou shalt have proof how savoreth of salt  
The bread of others, and how hard a road  
The going down and up another's stairs."

To have such pure poetry as this, which remains poetry still in Longfellow's perfect translation, turned into mere rhetoric, into "that bread which is the bitterest of all food, those stairs which are the most toilsome of all paths," jars cruelly upon the sensibilities of all to whom the original has become familiar and sacred.

**248: 24.** *We ought to add.* Here the journalist and reviewer most inopportunately intrudes upon the eulogist. As to the eulogy itself, the catalogue of dignitaries in the preceding sentence has no such impressiveness for the democratic reader as it may have had for English readers of fifty years ago. In fact it is a little ridiculous, and throws a curious light either on Macaulay's estimate of his readers, or, what is equally probable, upon the limitations of his own nature. To see that nature at its best we must turn back to the revelation of a worthier feeling in the touching description of Addison's dedication of his works to his friend Craggs.



## GLOSSARY

For the principle followed in compiling this Glossary, and on the use of reference books generally, see Preface.

- Act.** At Oxford, the occasion of the conferring of degrees, at which formerly miracle and mystery plays were enacted. After 1669 the Act was performed in the Sheldonian Theater, and London companies frequently went down to give performances. 213:15.
- Act of Settlement.** The agreement by which the Hanoverians and not the Stuarts (whom Louis XIV. favored) were to succeed Queen Anne. 165:6.
- Ag'barus or Ab'garus.** Ruler of Edessa in Mesopotamia. Eusebius supposed him to have been the author of a letter written to Christ, found in the church at Edessa. The letter is believed by Gibbon and others to be spurious. 136:22.
- Am'adis of Gaul.** The hero of a famous mediæval romance. Also the name of the romance. 70:30.
- Aminta.** An Italian pastoral drama by Tasso, 1573. 65:4.
- Anath'ema Marana'tha.** Commonly interpreted as an intense form of *anathema*, i.e., a thing accursed. See I. Cor., xvi., 22. 107:3.
- Arima'nes (or Ahr'iman).** See OROMASDES. 84:1.
- Ar'tegal, Sir.** The impersonation of Justice in the fifth book of Spenser's *Fairy Queen*. 113:19.
- Athalie'.** A tragedy by the French dramatist Racine. 214:1.
- Ballsar'da.** In Ariosto's *Orlando Furioso*, the enchanted sword of Orlando (cp. Arthur's Excalibur), which finally falls into the hands of Rogero. In Rogero's fight with Bradamante, it is exchanged for another sword (xiv., 68). 125:18.
- Bena'cus.** The largest lake of Northern Italy and noted for storms. It is now called Garda. Vergil (*Georgics* 2, 160) tells of "Benacus, swelling with billows and boisterous turmoil, like a sea." 154:30.
- Bentley, Richard.** A noted English classical scholar. His "Dissertation on the Epistles of Phalaris" (1697, 1699), which Porson, another noted scholar, called "the immortal dissertation," was written to prove the spuriousness of those epistles. 137:22.
- Biographia Britannica.** Published 1747-66. Long a standard work; superseded of course now, especially by the *Dictionary of National Biography*. 129:7.
- Blenheim.** In Bavaria. The scene of the great defeat of the French (1704) by the allies under Marlborough and Prince Eugene. 164:29.
- Book of Gold.** The name given to the list of Genoese nobles and citizens of property which was made at the time Andrea Doria deliv-

- ered Genoa from French domination (1528). 154:22.
- Boyle, Charles.** He attempted, with the help of others, to defend the genuineness of the "Epistles of Phalaris" against the famous scholar Bentley. Swift's *Battle of the Books* is founded on the incident. See Macaulay's sketch of Atterbury in the *Ency. Brit.* 137:5.
- Bradaman'te.** In Ariosto's *Orlando Furioso*, a woman of great prowess, finally overcome by Rogero, whom she marries. 125:16.
- Brunel, Sir Marc Isambard.** A civil engineer who in 1806 completed machinery for making ships' blocks. 140:26.
- Button's.** A London coffee-house, probably established by an old servant of Addison's. 128:15.
- Captain General.** See **MARLBOROUGH**. 175:21.
- Catharine of Braganza.** The Infanta of Portugal. Married Charles II. of England in 1662. 129:23.
- Cat'inat, Nicholas.** Commander of the French army in Northern Italy in the War of the Spanish Succession. 159:30.
- Charter House** (a corruption of *Chartreuse*). Originally a Carthusian monastery in London; later an endowed hospital and school for boys. Pictured by Thackeray, in *The Newcomes*, under the name of Grey Friars. 130:20.
- Child's.** A coffee-house, frequented by churchmen. 204:17.
- Cinna.** A tragedy by the French dramatist Corneille. 214:2.
- Clarendon, Earl of** (Edward Hyde). The chief adviser of Charles I. during the Civil War. The great history of the Rebellion which he left was not published till 1704. 85:11.
- Cock Lane Ghost.** See **Boswell's Johnson**, June 25, 1763. 136:18.
- Collier, Jeremy.** An English clergyman. He attacked the contemporary theater in his *Immorality and Profaneness of the English Stage*, 1698. 197:3.
- Conduct of the Allies.** A famous Tory pamphlet written by Swift. 1711. 177:13.
- Congreve, 126:29; Wycherley, 197:5; Etherege, 197:4; Vanbrugh, 197:16.** For the Restoration drama and dramatists, see Macaulay's essay on Leigh Hunt's edition of the dramatists; also his *History*, Chapters II. and III.
- Corporation.** In English politics, a body of men governing a town and selecting its member of Parliament. 202:4.
- Defensio Populi.** Properly *Pro Populo Anglicano Defensio*. Milton's most famous Latin work, 1651. See **SALMASIUS**. 48:7.
- demy', or demi.** At Magdalen College, Oxford, a student upon a scholarship, who will succeed to the next vacant fellowship. 132:19.
- Dom'nic, Saint.** The founder of the Dominican order of monks. A religious zealot, and friend of De Montfort the elder in the crusade against the Albigenses, 1208. 114:5.
- Don Ju'an.** In the Spanish and Italian plays on this theme, Don Juan jeeringly invites the statue or the ghost of the man he had killed to supper. It comes and drags him to hell. 76:19.
- Duenna, The.** One of Sheridan's comedies. 244:5.
- Dunstan, Saint.** Archbishop of Canterbury in the tenth century. Often described as a mystic. One legend relates that he once seized

- the devil by the nose with a pair of red-hot tongs. 114:5.
- Elizabethan age** In literature, the term commonly includes the reigns of both Elizabeth and James I. 127:4.
- Erasmus.** A famous Dutch theologian-scholar. His works, after the fashion of the time (1500), were written in Latin. 151:10.
- Escobar' y Mendo'za, Antonio.** A Spanish Jesuit who taught that purity of intention may justify even criminal acts. 114:6.
- Etherege.** See CONGREVE. 197:4.
- Eugene, Prince.** The Austrian general in the War of the Spanish Succession. 205:22.
- Faithful Shepherdess.** A pastoral drama by John Fletcher, c. 1609. 65:2.
- Fausti'na.** The profligate wife of the Roman emperor, Marcus Aurelius. 172:19.
- Fleetwood, Charles.** An English Parliamentary general, son-in-law of Cromwell. He died in obscurity long after the Restoration. 112:21.
- Fracasto'rius.** The Latin form of Fracastorio. An Italian physician of the 16th century, who wrote Latin poems on pathological subjects. 151:10.
- Frances'ca da Rim'ini.** Made immortal in the most famous Canto (*Inf.* v.) of Dante's *Divine Comedy*. 173:21.
- Freeholder.** A political paper published by Addison, December, 1715 to June, 1716. 158:8.
- Gallio.** See Acts xviii., 12-17. 114:18.
- Gazetteer.** The editor of the state newspaper, the *Gazette*, established by Charles II. 189:15.
- Ger'ano-Pygmæoma'chia, or Pygmæo-Geranomachia.** (*Battle of the Pygmies and Cranes.*) A Latin poem by Addison. 152:15.
- Godolphin, Earl of.** Lord High Treasurer during the early part of Anne's reign. As a financier, he raised the funds to support Marlborough in his prosecution of the war on the continent. 163:8.
- Grand Alliance.** The alliance formed in 1701 between the Holy Roman Empire, England, and the Netherlands against France and Spain. 160:5.
- Greclan, The.** A London coffee-house of the eighteenth century. The Learned Club met there. 189:27.
- Guardian.** A periodical published by Steele and Addison, 1713. 153:3.
- Gwynn, Nell.** An English actress, and mistress of Charles II. 236:24.
- Halifax.** See MONTAGUE. 160:20.
- Hampton Court.** A royal palace on the Thames. 127:3
- Harley, Edward.** An English Tory statesman and High Churchman. Before 1690 he had been a Whig. 175:16.
- Holland House.** See Note on, 236:22.
- Hough, John.** Bishop of Worcester. Elected president of Magdalen College, 1687. 132:6.
- Hume, Joseph.** An English politician and Member of Parliament from 1812-55. He was noted for his watchfulness against abuses in public expenditure. 85:11.
- Inns of Court.** The name of four legal societies of London, and of the premises which they occupy—the Inner Temple, the Middle

- Temple, Lincoln's Inn, and Gray's Inn. 211:8.
- Ireland, William Henry. A writer of plays which he pretended to have discovered, and attributed to Shakspeare. *Vortigern and Rowena* was played at Drury Lane, 1796, and its complete failure resulted in exposure. 136:19.
- Jack Pudding. A clown in English folk-lore. 194:13.
- Jonathan's and Garraway's. London coffee-houses frequented by merchants and stock-jobbers. The promoters of the South Sea Bubble met at Garraway's. 211:12
- Kit-Cat Club. A club of Whig politicians and wits. 147:5.
- Lapu'tan flapper. See *Gulliver's Travels*, iii. 2. 126:16.
- Machi'næ Gesticulan'tes. (*Puppet Show*.) A Latin poem by Addison. 152:14.
- Malebol'ge. (*Evil Pits*.) Dante, *Inferno*, cantos 18-30. 69:23.
- Manchester, Earl of. Ambassador to France just before the War of the Spanish Succession. 146:29.
- Marcet, Mrs. Jane. She published in 1816 *Conversations on Political Economy*, a much-praised book in its time. 51:11.
- Marlborough, Duke of (John Churchill). One of the most famous of England's great commanders. He was the leading spirit of the Grand Alliance. 163:8.
- Marli. Marly-le-Roy, a village ten miles from Paris, noted for a chateau of Louis XIV. 199:20.
- Mon'tague, or Montagu, Charles, Earl of Halifax (1661-1715). See *Essay on Addison*, pp. 139, 143. 51:12.
- Montfort, Simon de. Two of the name, father and son, were commanders in the 13th century. The son, in a struggle with Henry III., defeated and captured him, and virtually originated the House of Commons. 114:5.
- Mourad Bey. Commander of the Mamelukes at their defeat by Napoleon in the Battle of the Pyramids. 169:7.
- New'digate prize. An annual prize for English verse, founded at Oxford by Sir Roger Newdigate. 139:24
- Newmarket Heath, in Cambridgeshire. Annual horse-races have been held there since the time of James I. 165:14.
- October Club. A club of extreme Tories, named for its celebrated October ale. 211:27.
- Oromas'des (or Ormuzd, Ormazd, Ahura Mazda). The Wise or Good Spirit in the Zoroastrian mythology, who will ultimately triumph over Ahriman, the Evil One. 83:30.
- Pastor Fido. An Italian pastoral drama by Guarini, c. 1583. 65:4.
- perlpetl'a. A Greek technical term, signifying a sudden change or reverse of fortune, on which the plot of a tragedy turns; the denouement. 216:20.
- Prior, Matthew. An English poet. After the death of Anne and the rise of the Whig ministry, he was imprisoned under suspicion of high treason (1715-17). 126:30.
- Ravenna, Wood of. The *Pineta* or pine forest on the shore near Ravenna. See Dante, *Purg.* xxviii, 20. 173:18.

- Rich, Henry.** Earl of Holland, from whom Holland House took its name. 240:18.
- Sacheverell, Henry.** An English High Church clergyman and violent Tory. He was impeached for preaching against the Whig ministry. The trial grew into a party struggle, which resulted in the overthrow of the Whigs in 1710. 175:27.
- St. James's Coffee-House.** The resort of politicians. 204:18.
- Salmasius, Claudius.** The Latinized name of a French scholar whose book in defense of the policy of Charles I. called forth Milton's *Pro Populo Defensio*. 102:24.
- Santa Croce, Church of.** In Florence. Michelangelo, Galileo, and others are buried there. 173:18.
- Satirist . . .** Age. Sensational journals of Macaulay's time. 232:8.
- Saul.** A tragedy by the Italian poet Alfieri. 214:1.
- Savoy, Duke of.** See VICTOR AMADEUS. 160:1.
- Seatonian prize.** An annual prize for sacred poetry, founded at Cambridge by the will (1741) of Thos. Seaton, hymn writer. 139:24.
- Shrewsbury, Duke of (Charles Talbot).** One of the noblemen who invited the Prince of Orange to England in 1688. On the death of Anne in 1714 he became Lord High Treasurer. 88:11.
- Silius Italicus.** A Roman writer of a dull heroic poem in seventeen books. 135:12.
- Smalridge, George.** Bishop of Bristol in the time of Queen Anne. Dr. Johnson praised his sermons for their "style." 198:9.
- Somers, John.** A leading Whig statesman in the time of William III. and Anne. He helped to draw up the Declaration of Rights which was presented to William and Mary. He secured for Addison a pension. 88:10.
- Somerset, Charles Seymour,** sixth Duke of Somerset. Called "the Proud" — hardly distinguished otherwise. He refused to employ Addison as tutor to his son, possibly because future patronage would be expected of him. 145:11.
- Spectator.** A paper published daily by Steele, Addison and others, Mar., 1711, to Dec., 1712; continued by Addison in 1714. 153:3.
- Spence, Joseph (1699-1768).** An English critic who left a volume of criticism and anecdotes. 148:2.
- Squire Western.** A character in Fielding's *Tom Jones*. 225:4.
- Sunmer, Rev. Charles R.** Librarian to George IV., and afterwards Bishop of Winchester. 45: *Title*.
- Surface, Joseph.** A hypocrite in Sheridan's *School for Scandal*. 235:15.
- Talus.** An attendant on Sir Artegal. See Spenser's *Fairy Queen*. v. 1, 12. 113: 19.
- Tangier', or Tangiers.** A seaport of Morocco. 129:22.
- Tatler.** A periodical published by Steele, and Addison, 1709-11. 181: 12.
- Teazle, Sir Peter.** A character in Sheridan's *School for Scandal*. 235: 15.
- Temple, Sir William.** An English statesman and author. Macaulay has an essay upon him. 191:27.
- Theobald's.** A country-seat in Hertfordshire. The residence of Lord Burleigh. Used as a palace by James I. 127:1.
- Thundering Legion.** A legion of Christian soldiers under Marcus

- Aurelius, whose prayers for rain, according to legend, were answered by a thunderstorm which destroyed their enemies. Addison speaks of the event in his essay "Of the Christian Religion," vii. 3. 136:20.
- Toland, John. An English deist who published a life of Milton in 1698. 45:13
- Town Talk. A paper established by Steele, Dec. 17, 1715. But nine numbers were issued. 226:3.
- Vanbrugh'. See CONGREVE. 197:15.
- Vane, Sir Henry. An English Republican statesman, with a "dash of the fanatic." One of the Fifth Monarchy men. Beheaded 1662. Milton's 17th sonnet is addressed to him. 112:19.
- Victor Amade'us II., Duke of Savoy. He abandoned Louis and joined the Alliance in 1703. 172:11.
- Walpole, Horace (1717-97). The author of *The Castle of Otranto* and many memoirs and letters. 192:1.
- Walpole, Sir Robert (1676-1745). Not to be confounded with his son Horace, For an account of him, see Macaulay's first essay on the Earl of Chatham and his essay on Horace Walpole. 5a:12.
- Wild of Sussex. Commonly called "Weald." The Weald is a name given to a district comprising portions of the counties of Kent and Sussex in southeastern England. It is not certain whether the word is to be traced to the Anglo-Saxon *weald*, "forest." modern "wold," or whether it is an irregular form of *wild*. 129:18.
- Will's. A well-known London coffee-house in the time of Dryden and Addison, known also as "The Wits' Coffee-House." The resort of poets and wits. 189:27.
- Wood, Anthony a. An industrious antiquary whose books on the antiquities and the great men of the University of Oxford have for more than two centuries been a mine of information. 45:13.
- Wych'erley. See CONGREVE. 197:5.
- Xeres' (whence our word *sherry*). A town in southwestern Spain, famous for its exportation of wines. Macaulay seems to think it is a river. 97:14.

## APPENDIX





## APPENDIX

(Adapted, and enlarged, from the *Manual for the Study of English Classics*, by George L. Marsh)

### HELPS TO STUDY

#### MACAULAY

What is the date of Macaulay's first contribution to the *Edinburgh Review*? How old was he at this time? Who was the editor of this magazine? How long did Macaulay continue to contribute to it (p. 15)?

Into what divisions do the writings of Macaulay fall (p. 19)? Name six of Macaulay's best essays. What is their literary significance (p. 38)?

Perry Picture 93 is a portrait of Macaulay.

#### HIS STYLE

What change did Macaulay bring about in the prose style of the first quarter of the nineteenth century (p. 16)? What has been the influence of his style on modern journalism (p. 39)?

Are the leading traits of Macaulay's character—brusqueness, precision without fastidiousness, and self-confidence—illustrated in his style?

His style is noted for clearness, simplicity, force, balanced and antithetical structure, use of illustration, and use of exaggerations; collect illustrations of all these qualities from particular passages of each essay.

Note Macaulay's use of words. Are they long, short, common, unusual, scientific, newly-coined, foreign, con-

crete, general, pictorial, suggestive, of Latin or Saxon origin? What would you say of his use of words on page 98? On page 161?

Examine any ten consecutive pages for his use of words, and tabulate your conclusions. What is the average length of his words?

Note his sentence length and structure. Are any of his sentences too short for unity? Any too long for unity? Are they prevailingly loose or periodic? Note examples of loose sentences.

Are his sentences effective, artistic, overworked?

Examine any fifteen consecutive pages and write out your conclusions as to the average number of words in each sentence.

How many sentences have fewer than fifteen words? How many more than thirty?

How many violate the normal order?

How does Macaulay obtain emphasis?

What do you think of the sentence length on page 97?

Note the short sentences on page 165. Do you think it possible to connect these short sentences?

On any two pages you may choose, how many complex sentences are there? How many compound? Is it possible to convert any of his complex sentences into compound ones?

How does Macaulay connect paragraphs?

Illustrate his unity of paragraph structure from any six pages you choose.

What is the topic sentence of the second paragraph on page 137?

Selecting ten paragraphs, pick out and write down in your own words the topic sentence of each paragraph. Is it at the beginning, at the end, or in the middle of the paragraph? What relations do the other sentences bear to it?

Does Macaulay use an abundance of figures of speech? Write out as many as you can find.

What are the sources of his illustrations? Do they seem forced (p. 36)?

Does he assume that the reader is well informed?

Does it seem true that he read everything and was incapable of forgetting anything (p. 27)?

Notice his use of rhetorical questions on pages 92 and 100. What effect do they have?

Does he ever sacrifice truth to brilliancy?

Collect glaring instances of hyperbole.

#### ESSAY ON MILTON

What proportion of this essay is taken up by Milton's life and writings and what by the Civil War and Macaulay's theory of poetic composition?

What is his plan in taking up these topics in the order which he observes? How does this illustrate his faculty of organization (p. 24)? How does he proceed to his subject?

Write a synopsis of Macaulay's reasons for holding that a great poem produced in a civilized age is a more marked proof of genius than one written in an earlier age (pp. 50, 51).

What does he say of the enjoyment of poetry? Of the qualifications of a poet (p. 56)? Of the general relation of poetry to civilization?

Tabulate the main points of the comparison between Dante and Milton (pp. 67 ff.).

Does the digression treating of the Civil War seem out of proportion (pp. 86-105)?

Sum up the moral that Macaulay attempts to point from the excesses of the Revolution (p. 99).

Is Macaulay open to the same charge he prefers against Hume (p. 94)? Discuss the merits of Macaulay's argu-

ment that Milton was justified in defending the execution of Charles I; in accepting office under Cromwell.

What is the purpose of Macaulay's elaborate description of the Puritans and the other parties (pp. 108 ff.) in relation to Milton?

What is Macaulay's opinion of Milton's prose (p. 121)?

Characterize the conclusion of the essay. Why does Macaulay reserve for the end what he says of Milton's personality?

Perry Pictures 645-47 (of Charles I and his family) may be used with this essay.

#### ESSAY ON ADDISON

In relation to Addison, see also the *Sir Roger de Coverley Papers*, Lake English Classics edition.

Compare the opening with that of the *Essay on Milton*. What is the purpose here (p. 125)?

What high praise does Macaulay give Addison (p. 128)? Note and justify these points as you read the essay.

Notice the general divisions of the essay (pp. 125-29; 130-42; 143-62; 163-88; 189-219; 220-39; 240-48). Summarize in a few words the main topics treated under each division. Which are the more important divisions? Which seem out of proportion? Is the order in which Macaulay takes them up a good one?

Systematize under appropriate headings what Macaulay says of Addison's life, his character, and his writings.

Is Macaulay fair to Steele's character (pp. 184 ff.)? (See Introduction to the *de Coverley Papers*, Lake Classics.) Note how Macaulay continues to emphasize the contrast between Addison and Steele (p. 224).

Can you justify the space and detailed treatment given to the Pope episode. In relation to Pope, see the Lake Classic edition of portions of Pope's *Iliad*.

Note how skillfully Macaulay reiterates Addison's

virtues at the end (p. 248). Are there any new characteristics of Addison introduced here? Show where each one not new has been introduced before.

Characterize the conclusion. Compare it with the conclusion of the *Essay on Milton*.

Which of the two essays illustrates Macaulay's style to the better advantage? Summarize the chief points of difference in style between the two essays. In which is there a greater proportion of short sentences?

### THEME SUBJECTS

1. Macaulay's career (pp. 15-20).
2. Personal merits and defects of Macaulay (pp. 24-42). (Themes illustrating separately the different characteristics developed in the pages just referred to may be assigned.)
3. A study of Macaulay's sentences; of his paragraphs; of his choice of words; of his organization of the whole composition.
4. The *Essay on Milton*, or the *Essay on Addison*, as a review.
5. Discussion of Macaulay's view of the effect of civilization on poetry (pp. 50 ff.).
6. Macaulay's estimate of Milton's *Minor Poems* (pp. 61-66).
7. An answer to Macaulay's argument in favor of Milton's "public conduct" (pp. 85 ff.).
8. Character sketch of Milton.
9. The nature of the Puritans (pp. 108-14).
10. Summaries of the main divisions of the *Essay on Addison* (p. 278).
11. A sketch of Addison's life (picked out carefully from the essay).
12. Addison as a poet and dramatist (pp. 139, 167-172, 174, 210 ff.).

13. Addison's political career.
14. Addison's relations to Steele. (A defense of Steele may be attempted.)
15. Addison and Pope (pp. 215, 226 ff.).
16. Character sketch of Addison.
17. Differences in method and style, between the *Essay on Milton* and the *Essay on Addison*.
18. Macaulay's influence on modern style (pp. 40, 41), with examples taken from newspaper or magazine articles.

#### SELECTIONS FOR CLASS READING

1. Poetry and civilization (pp. 50-56).
2. Milton's work in dramatic form (pp. 61-66).
3. Milton and Dante (pp. 67-71, 76-81).
4. Macaulay on the defense of Charles I (pp. 92-95).
5. The Puritans (pp. 108-14).
6. Milton's character (pp. 116-24).
7. Introductory estimate of Addison (pp. 127-29).
8. Addison's *Campaign* (pp. 167-72).
9. Characteristics of Addison (pp. 179-83).
10. Addison and Steele (pp. 184-86).
11. Addison's wit and humor (pp. 192-96).
12. *The Spectator* (pp. 204-9).
13. Addison and Pope (pp. 226-36).
14. Addison's death, and a concluding estimate (pp. 246-49).

## CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE

In the following parallel columns are given the most important dates in the history of English and American literature, from the time of Shakspeare down to 1900. Special care has been taken to include the classics commonly read in high schools, so that the historical background of any given classic will be apparent from the table:

### AMERICAN

### ENGLISH

- |  |                    |   |
|--|--------------------|---|
|  | 1594-5             | Shakspeare: <i>Midsummer Night's Dream.</i> |
|  | 1596 (or earlier): | <i>Romeo and Juliet.</i>                    |
|  | 1598 (or earlier): | <i>The Merchant of Venice.</i>              |
|  | 1599               | <i>Henry V.</i>                             |
|  | 1599-1600          | <i>As You Like It.</i>                      |

### 1601-1700

- |      |      |  |
|------|------|--|
|      | 1601 | <i>Julius Cæsar.</i>                                       |
|      | 1602 | <i>Hamlet; Twelfth Night</i> (acted).                      |
|      | 1603 | Queen Elizabeth died.                                      |
|      | 1605 | Bacon: <i>Advancement of Learning.</i>                     |
| 1607 |      | Jamestown founded.   |
| 1608 |      | J. Smith: <i>A True Relation.</i>                          |
| 1610 |      | Strachey: <i>A True Reportory.</i>                         |
|      | 1610 | Shakspeare: <i>Macbeth</i> (acted).                        |
|      | 1611 | <i>The Tempest</i> (acted).<br>"King James" Bible printed. |
|      | 1612 | Bacon: <i>Essays</i> (first edition, 1597).                |
|      | 1614 | Raleigh: <i>History of the World.</i>                      |
|      | 1616 | Shakspeare died.   |
| 1620 |      | Plymouth Colony founded.                                   |
|      | 1620 | Bacon: <i>Novum Organum.</i>                               |

AMERICAN	ENGLISH
1624 J. Smith: <i>The General History of Virginia.</i>	1623 Shakspeare: <i>Plays</i> (first folio edition).
1630 Massachusetts Bay Colony founded. Bradford: <i>History of Plimoth Plantation</i> begun about this time. Winthrop: <i>Journal</i> begun, ended 1649.	1627 Drayton: <i>Ballad of Agincourt.</i>
1635 R. Mather: <i>Journal</i> (written).	1633 Milton: <i>L'Allegro and Il Penseroso.</i>
1636 Harvard College established.	1634 Milton: <i>Comus</i> (acted).
1638 New Haven founded.	1638 Trial of John Hampden. Milton: <i>Lycidas</i> (published).
1640 <i>The Bay Psalm Book.</i>	1642 Theaters closed. Browne: <i>Religio Medici.</i>
1644 Williams: <i>The Bloody Tenent.</i>	1644 Milton: <i>Arcopagitica.</i> Battle of Marston Moor.
1650 A. Bradstreet: <i>Poems.</i>	1648 Herrick: <i>Hesperides.</i> 1649 Charles I executed.
1662 Wigglesworth: <i>The Day of Doom.</i>	1653 Walton: <i>The Compleat Angler.</i>
1681 C. Mather: <i>Diary</i> begun.	1660 The monarchy restored. Pepys: <i>Diary</i> begun, ended 1669.
1682 Philadelphia founded.	1666 London fire.
1689 King William's War.	1667 Milton: <i>Paradise Lost.</i>
1692 Salem witchcraft trials.	1671 Milton: <i>Paradise Regained; Samson Agonistes.</i>
	1674 Milton died.
	1678 Bunyan: <i>Pilgrim's Progress.</i>
	1681 Dryden: <i>Absalom and Achitophel.</i>
	1682 Dryden: <i>MacFlecknoe.</i>
	1688 The English Revolution.
	1697 Dryden: <i>Alexander's Feast.</i>



1701-1800

## AMERICAN

- 1701 Yale College established.  
 1702-13 Queen Anne's War.  
 1702 C. Mather: *Magnalia Christi Americana*.  
 1704 Boston News Letter established.
- 1722 Edwards: *Diary* begun.
- 1732 Washington born.  
 1733 Franklin: *Poor Richard's Almanac* (begun).  
 1741 Edwards: *Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God*.
- 1755 Braddock's defeat.  
 1756 Woolman: *Journal* (begun).  
 1758 Franklin: *The Way to Wealth in Poor Richard's Almanac*.

## ENGLISH

- 1700 Dryden: *Fables* ("Palamon and Arcite," etc.).  
 1702 Queen Anne ascended throne.  
 1704 Swift: *Tale of a Tub*.  
 1709 Steele and Addison: *The Tatler* begun.  
 1711 Steele and Addison: *The Spectator* begun.  
 1712 Pope: *The Rape of the Lock*.  
 1714 Queen Anne died.  
 1715 Pope: *Translation of the Iliad* (Books I-IV).  
 1719 Defoe: *Robinson Crusoe*.  
 1722 Defoe: *Journal of the Plague Year*.  
 1726 Swift: *Gulliver's Travels*.  
 Thomson: *Winter*.  
 1728 Pope: *Dunciad*.  
 1732 Pope: *Essay on Man*.
- 1740 Richardson: *Pamela*.
- 1742 Fielding: *Joseph Andrews*.  
 1744 Death of Pope.  
 1747 Gray: *Ode on Eton College*.  
 1748 Richardson: *Clarissa Harlowe*.  
 1749 Fielding: *Tom Jones*.  
 1750 Johnson: *The Rambler* (begun).  
 1751 Gray: *Elegy Written in a Country Churchyard*.  
 1755 Johnson: *English Dictionary*.

## AMERICAN

- 1765 Godfrey: *Juvenile Poems*  
(with *The Prince of Parthia*, the first American drama).  
The Stamp Act.
- 1771 Franklin: *Autobiography*,  
first part, written.
- 1773 P. Wheatley: *Poems*.
- 1775 Trumbull: *M'Fingal*.  
Henry: Speech in the  
Virginia Convention.
- 1776 The Declaration of Independence.  
Paine: *Common Sense*.
- 1783 The Treaty of Paris.
- 1785 Dwight: *The Conquest of Canaan*.
- 1786 Freneau: *Poems*.
- 1789 Franklin: *Autobiography*,  
second part, written.
- 1796 Washington: *Farewell Address*.
- 1798 Brown: *Wieland*.  
J. Hopkinson: *Hail Columbia*.

## ENGLISH

- 1759 Sterne: *Tristram Shandy*  
(begun).  
Johnson: *Rasselas*.
- 1760 King George III on  
throne.
- 1762 Macpherson: *The Poems of Ossian*.
- 1764 Walpole: *The Castle of Otranto*.  
Goldsmith: *The Traveler*.
- 1765 Percy: *Reliques of Ancient Poetry*.
- 1766 Goldsmith: *Vicar of Wakefield*.
- 1770 Goldsmith: *Deserted Village*.
- 1771 *Encyclopedia Britannica*,  
first edition.
- 1773 Goldsmith: *She Stoops to Conquer* (acted).
- 1775 Burke: *Speech on Conciliation*.  
Sheridan: *The Rivals*.
- 1776 Gibbon: *Decline and Fall of Roman Empire*.
- 1779 Johnson: *Lives of the Poets*.
- 1783 Crabbe: *The Village*.
- 1785 Cowper: *The Task*.
- 1786 Burns: *Poems*.
- 1789 Blake: *Songs of Innocence*.
- 1791 Boswell: *Life of Dr. Johnson*.
- 1798 Wordsworth and Coleridge: *Lyrical Ballads* ("The Ancient Mariner," etc.).

## 1801-1900

- 1803 The Louisiana Purchase.

- 1805 Scott: *Lay of the Last Minstrel*.  
1808 Scott: *Marmion*.

## AMERICAN

- 1809 Irving: *Knickerbocker's History of New York.*
- 1812-14 War with England.
- 1814 Kcy: *The Star-Spangled Banner.*
- 1815 Freneau: *Poems.*
- 1817 Bryant: *Thanatopsis.*
- 1819 Drake: *The American Flag.*
- 1820 Irving: *The Sketch Book.*  
The Missouri Compromise.
- 1821 Cooper: *The Spy.*  
Bryant: *Poems.*
- 1822 Irving: *Bracebridge Hall.*
- 1823 Payne: *Home, Sweet Home.*  
Cooper: *The Pilot.*
- 1824 Irving: *Tales of a Traveller.*
- 1825 Webster: *The Bunker Hill Monument.*
- 1826 Cooper: *The Last of the Mohicans.*
- 1827 Poe: *Tamerlane and Other Poems.*
- 1831 Poe: *Poems.*
- 1832 Irving: *The Alhambra.*  
S. F. Smith: *America.*
- 1833 Poe: *MS. Found in a Rattle.*

## ENGLISH

- 1809 Byron: *English Bards and Scotch Reviewers.*
- 1810 Scott: *The Lady of the Lake.*
- 1811 J. Austen: *Sense and Sensibility.*
- 1812 Byron: *Childe Harold, I, II.*
- 1813 Southey: *Life of Nelson.*
- 1814 Scott: *Waverley.*  
Wordsworth: *The Excursion.*
- 1815 The Battle of Waterloo.
- 1816 Byron: *The Prisoner of Chillon; Childe Harold, III.*  
Coleridge: *Christabel.*
- 1817 Keats: *Poems* (first collection).
- 1818 Byron: *Childe Harold, IV.*
- 1819 Scott: *Ivanhoe.*
- 1820 Keats: *Poems.*  
Shelley: *Prometheus Unbound.*
- 1821 Shelley: *Adonais.*  
De Quincey: *Confessions of an Opium Eater.*
- 1823 Scott: *Quentin Durward.*  
Lamb: *Essays of Elia.*
- 1824 Landor: *Imaginary Conversations.*
- 1825 Macaulay: *Essay on Milton.*
- 1827 A. and C. Tennyson: *Poems by Two Brothers.*
- 1828 Carlyle: *Essay on Burns.*
- 1830 Tennyson: *Poems Chiefly Lyrical.*
- 1832 Death of Scott; The Reform Bill.
- 1833 Carlyle: *Sartor Resartus.*  
Tennyson: *Poems.*  
Browning: *Pauline.*

## AMERICAN

## ENGLISH

- |         |  |      |   |
|---------|--|------|---|
| 1835    | Drake: <i>The Culprit Fay</i> , etc.   | 1835 | Browning: <i>Paracelsus</i> .   |
| 1836    | Holmes: <i>Poems</i> .<br>Emerson: <i>Nature</i> .   | 1836 | Dickens: <i>Pickwick Papers</i> .   |
| 1837    | Emerson: <i>The American Scholar</i> .<br>Hawthorne: <i>Twice-Told Tales</i> , first series.<br>Whittier: <i>Poems</i> . | 1837 | Victoria became Queen.<br>De Quincey: <i>Revolt of the Tartars</i> .<br>Carlyle: <i>The French Revolution</i> .                         |
| 1839    | Poe: <i>Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque</i> .<br>Longfellow: <i>Voices of the Night</i> .                           |      |   |
| 1840.   | Dana: <i>Two Years Before the Mast</i> .   | 1840 | Macaulay: <i>Essay on Clive</i> .   |
| 1841    | Emerson: <i>Essays</i> , first series.<br>Longfellow: <i>Ballads and Other Poems</i> .                                   | 1841 | Browning: <i>Pippa Passes</i> .<br>Macaulay: <i>Essay on Warren Hastings</i> .  |
| 1842    | Hawthorne: * <i>Twice-Told Tales</i> , second series.  | 1842 | Macaulay: <i>Lays of Ancient Rome</i> .<br>Browning: <i>Dramatic Lyrics</i> .   |
| 1843    | Poe: <i>The Gold-Bug</i> .<br>Prescott: <i>Conquest of Mexico</i> .  | 1843 | Dickens: <i>A Christmas Carol</i> .<br>Macaulay: <i>Essay on Addison</i> .<br>Ruskin: <i>Modern Painters</i> , Vol. I.                  |
| 1844    | Emerson: <i>Essays</i> , second series.<br>Lowell: <i>Poems</i> .  | 1844 | E. B. Browning: <i>Poems</i> .  |
| 1845    | Poe: <i>The Raven and Other Poems</i> .  | 1845 | Browning: <i>Dramatic Romances and Lyrics</i> .   |
| 1846    | Hawthorne: <i>Mosses from an Old Manse</i> .   | 1846 | Dickens: <i>The Cricket on the Hearth</i> .   |
| 1846-48 | War with Mexico.   |      |   |
| 1847    | Emerson: <i>Poems</i> .<br>Longfellow: <i>Evangeline</i> .<br>Parkman: <i>The Oregon Trail</i> .                         | 1847 | De Quincey: <i>Joan of Arc</i> .<br>Tennyson: <i>The Princess</i> .<br>Thackeray: <i>Vanity Fair</i> .<br>C. Brontë: <i>Jane Eyre</i> . |
| 1848    | Lowell: <i>Vision of Sir Launfal</i> .   | 1848 | Macaulay: * <i>History of England</i> , I, II.  |
| 1849    | Irving: <i>Oliver Goldsmith</i> .  | 1849 | De Quincey: <i>The English Mail Coach</i> .<br>M. Arnold: <i>The Strayed Reveller</i> , etc.  |
| 1850    | Emerson: <i>Representative Men</i> .<br>Hawthorne: <i>The Scarlet Letter</i> .   | 1850 | Tennyson: <i>In Memoriam</i> .<br>Dickens: <i>David Copperfield</i> .   |

## AMERICAN

- 1851 Hawthorne: *The House of the Seven Gables.*  
Parkman: *The Conspiracy of Pontiac.*
- 1852 Mrs. Stowe: *Uncle Tom's Cabin.*
- 1854 Thoreau: *Walden.*
- 1855 Longfellow: *Hiawatha.*  
Whitman: *Leaves of Grass.*
- 1856 Motley: *Rise of the Dutch Republic.*  
Curtis: *Prue and I.*
- 1858 Longfellow: *Courtship of Miles Standish.*  
Holmes: *Autocrat of the Breakfast Table.*
- 1861-65 The Civil War.
- 1862-66 Lowell: *Biglow Papers, II.*
- 1863 Longfellow: *Tales of a Wayside Inn.*
- 1865 Whitman: *Drum Taps.*
- 1866 Whittier: *Snow-Bound.*

## ENGLISH

- 1851 Thackeray: *Lectures on English Humorists.*  
G. Meredith: *Poems.*
- 1852 Thackeray: *Henry Esmond.*
- 1853 M. Arnold: *Poems* ("Sohrab and Rustum," etc.).  
Mrs. Gaskell: *Cranford.*
- 1855 R. Browning: *Men and Women.*  
Tennyson: *Maud.*
- 1856 Macaulay: *Essays on Johnson and Goldsmith.*  
Mrs. Browning: *Aurora Leigh.*
- 1857 Hughes: *Tom Brown's School Days.*
- 1859 Tennyson: *Idylls of the King.*  
Dickens: *A Tale of Two Cities.*  
G. Eliot: *Adam Bede.*  
Meredith: *Ordeal of Richard Feverel.*  
Darwin: *The Origin of Species.*
- 1860 G. Eliot: *The Mill on the Floss.*
- 1861 G. Eliot: *Silas Marner.*  
Reade: *The Cloister and the Hearth.*  
Palgrave: *The Golden Treasury.*
- 1862 Meredith: *Modern Love,* etc.
- 1863 G. Eliot: *Romola.*
- 1864 Browning: *Dramatis Personæ.*  
Swinburne: *Atalanta in Calydon.*
- 1865 Ruskin: *Sesame and Lilies.*
- 1866 Ruskin: *A Crown of Wild Olive.*

AMERICAN	ENGLISH
1868 Hale: <i>The Man Without a Country</i> , etc.	1868 Browning: <i>The Ring and the Book</i> .
1870 Bret Harte: <i>The Luck of Roaring Camp</i> , etc.	1868-70 Morris: <i>The Earthly Paradise</i> .
1871 Howells: <i>Their Wedding Journey</i> .	1869 Tennyson. <i>The Holy Grail</i> , etc.
1873 Aldrich: <i>Marjorie Daw</i> , etc.	1870 D. G. Rossetti: <i>Poems</i> .
1876 Mark Twain: <i>Tom Sawyer</i> .	1871 Swinburne: <i>Songs Before Sunrise</i> .
1877 Lanier: <i>Poems</i> .	1872 Tennyson: <i>Gareth and Lynette</i> , etc.
1879 Cable: <i>Old Creole Days</i> . Stockton: <i>Rudder Grange</i> .	1873 Arnold: <i>Literature and Dogma</i> .
1881 Whittier: <i>The King's Missive</i> .	1876 Morris: <i>Sigurd the Vol-sung</i> .
1886 H. Jackson: <i>Sonnets and Lyrics</i> .	1878 Stevenson: <i>An Inland Voyage</i> .
1887 M. E. Wilkins: <i>A Humble Romance</i> , etc.	1879 Stevenson: <i>Travels with a Donkey</i> . Meredith: <i>The Egoist</i> .
1888 Whitman: <i>November Boughs</i> .	1881 D. G. Rossetti: <i>Ballads and Sonnets</i> .
1890 E. Dickinson: <i>Poems</i> , first series.	1882 Stevenson: <i>New Arabian Nights</i> .
1891 Whitman: <i>Goodbye, My Fancy</i> .	1883 Stevenson: <i>Treasure Island</i> .
1898 War with Spain.	1886 Stevenson: <i>Kidnapped</i> .
	1887 Stevenson: <i>The Merry Men</i> ("Markheim," etc.).
	1888 Kipling: <i>Plain Tales from the Hills</i> . Barrie: <i>Auld Licht Idylls</i> .
	1889 Browning: <i>Asolando</i> .
	1891 Kipling: <i>Life's Handicap</i> .
	1892 Tennyson died.
	1893 Conington: <i>Translation of Aeneid</i> published. Barrie: <i>Two of Them</i> .
	1901 Queen Victoria died.









Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.  
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide  
Treatment Date: March 2009

**PreservationTechnologies**

A WORLD LEADER IN COLLECTIONS PRESERVATION



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 014 159 946 A

